



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

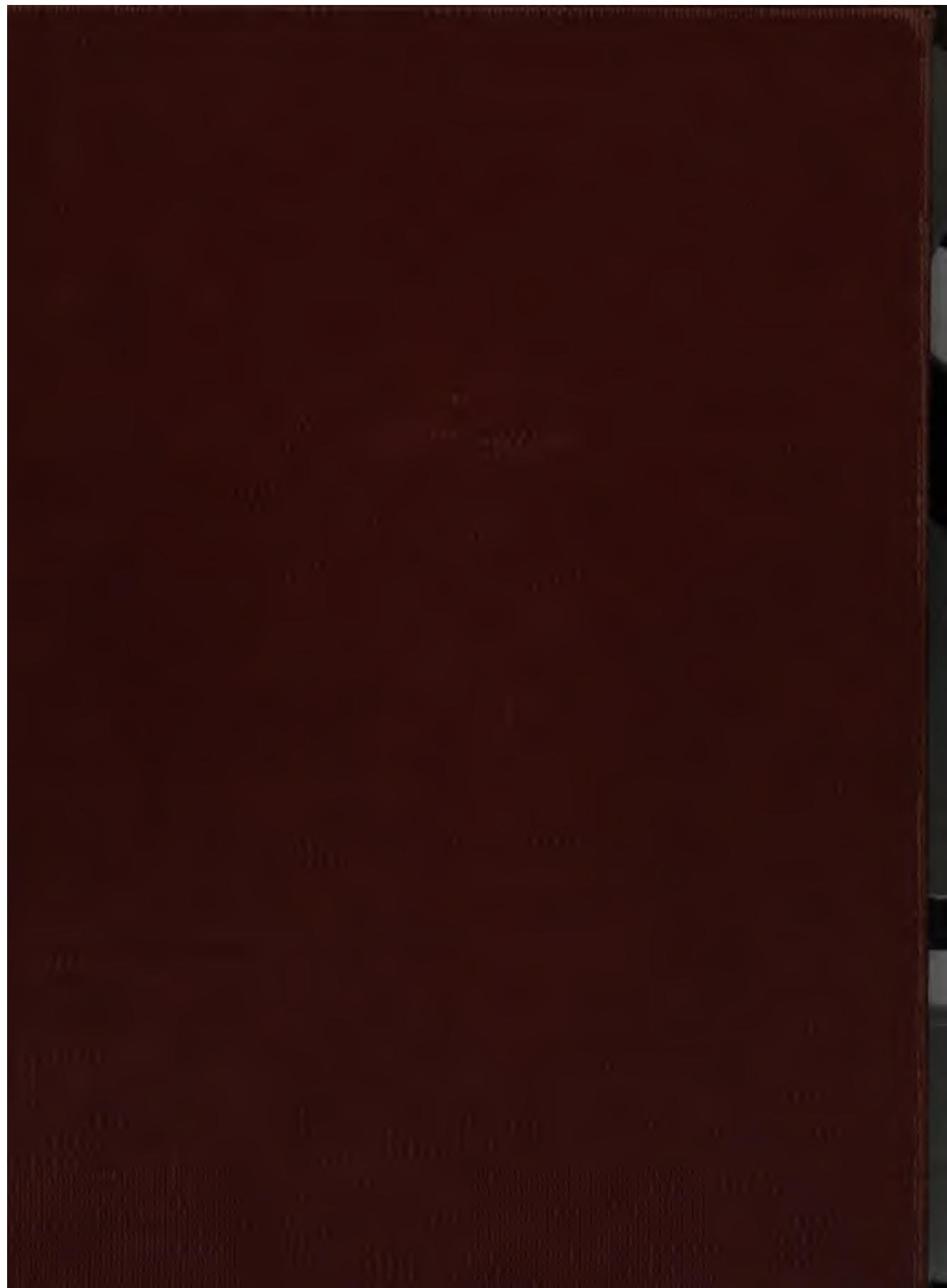
Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



14 A 53, A8, 90 (7)



HARVARD
COLLEGE
LIBRARY





THE
COMPLETE WORKS
IN
VERSE AND PROSE
OF
SAMUEL DANIEL.

VOL. II.



THE
COMPLETE WORKS
IN
VERSE AND PROSE
OF
SAMUEL DANIEL.

*EDITED, WITH MEMORIAL-INTRODUCTION AND A GLOSSARIAL
INDEX EMBRACING NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS.*

BY THE
REV. ALEXANDER B. GROSART,
D.D., LL.D. (EDIN.), F.S.A. (SCOT.),
St. George's, Blackburn, Lancashire;

IN FOUR VOLUMES.



VOL. II.

THE CIVILE WARS BETWEEN THE TWO HOUSES OF
LANCASTER AND YORKE.

1595—1623.

PRINTED FOR THE SPENSER SOCIETY.

1885.

[100 copies only.]

14453.48.90

✓

HARVARD COLLEGE LIBRARY
APPROPRIATION
FOR DUPLICATE BOOKS
ENGLISH TUTORIAL LIBRARY
TRANSFERRED TO
HARVARD COLLEGE LIBRARY
1940

Printed by Hazell, Watson, and Viney, Limited, London and Aylesbury.

249
H6-136
465-2

CONTENTS.

	PAGE
NOTE	2
EPISTLE-DEDICATORY TO "THE LADY MARIE, COUNTESSE	
DOWAGER OF PEMBROOKE"	3
Book I.	9
" II.	55
" III.	100
" IV.	135
" V.	173
" VI.	215
" VII.	257
" VIII.	298

X.

THE CIVILE WARS,

1595—1623.

II.

I

NOTE.

The 'Civile Wars' was issued fragmentarily. In 1595 appeared 'The First Fowre Bookes' (4to, 89 leaves). Some copies of this have added a 'Fift Book,' but this was taken from the edition in 'The Poeticall Essayes' of 1599, having been thus added to the remainder of the 1595 quarto prior to the publication of the 1599 quarto. This is shown by its being identical with that of 1599 (Aa—Ee in fours). To this comes next the semi-private folio of the 'Works' in 1601, which added a sixth and seventh book, by re-distribution of former books (as explained in the places). The folio of 1602 is the same with that of 1601. There followed the quarto of 1609. It again is identical with that of 1623 ('Whole Workes'). 1609 must have been kept standing in type, and must have been successively largely printed from, as the printing of 1623 is dim and worn compared with that of 1609, especially in the head-ornaments. Our text (as before) is the quarto of 1623; but herewith various readings and omitted stanzas are given below in their respective places. Many of these are most interesting and suggestive. The following are my signs in the various readings, etc. :—

¹ = 1595 4to.

² = 1599 4to.

³ = 1601 folio : being also 1602 folio (as above).

On opposite leaf the title-pages of 1595 and 1599 will be found—the latter being a special one in addition to the general title-page of 'The Poeticall Essayes.' On the *verso* of both is Mountjoy's shield. For the verse-dedication of the 'Civile Wars' to Mountjoy in 1599 4to, see Vol. I., p. 3. In the British Museum exemplar of the 1599 4to (11622 d. 1), the 1595 title-page is preserved. It is usually cancelled, to disguise that the 1599 volume is really (so far as it goes) a simple re-issue of 1595 'Civile Wars.'

On the Various Readings, suppressions and additions, see our 'Memorial-Introduction II.—Critical,' in our last volume.

A. B. G.

T H E
FIRST FOWRE

Bookes of the ciuile wars
between the two hou-
ses of *Lancaster*
and *Yorke.*

By Samvel Daniel.

*Aetas prima canat veneres
postrema tumultus.*



AT LONDON,
Printed by P. Short for Simon
Waterson. 1595.

The
Civill Wars
Of England, Be-
tweene the two Houses of
Lancaster and Yorke.

(::)

Aetas prima canat veneres postrema tumultus.

Sam. Daniell.

Veritas Tva Et Usque Ad Nubes.

At London,
Printed by P. S. for Symon Waterfor
1599.



TO THE RIGHT NOBLE
Lady, the Lady Marie, Countesse
*Dowager of Pembrooke.*¹
MADAME :



His Poëm of our last Ciuite Warres of England, (whereof the many Editions shewe what kinde of entertainement it hath had with the world) I haue now againe sent-forth, with the addition of two booke: the one, continuing 10 the course of the Historie; the other, making vp a part, which (for hast) was left unfurnisht in the former Impressions. And, hauing nothing else to doo with my life, but to worke whilſt I haue it; I held it my part, to adorne (the best I could) this Prouince, Nature hath allotted to my Charge: and which I desire to leaue, after my death, in the best forme I may; seeing I can erect no other pillars to sustaine my memorie, but my lines, nor otherwise pay my debts and the recknings of my gratitude to their honour 20 who haue donne me good, and furthered this Worke.

¹ This Epistle first appeared in 1609 edition.

And, whereas this Argument was long since undertaken/ (in a time which was not so well secur'd of the future, as God be blessed now it is) with a purpose, to shewe the deformities of Ciuite Diffension, and the miserable euent of Rebellions, Conspiracies, and bloudy Reuengements, which followed (as in a circle) upon that breach of the due course of Succession, by the Vsurpation of Hen. 4; and thereby to make the blessings of Peace, and the happinesse of an establisched Gouernment (in a direct³⁰ Line) the better to appeare: I trust I shall doo a gratefull worke to my Countrie, to continue the same, vnto the glorious Vnion of Hen. 7: from whence is descended our present Happinesse.

In which Worke, I haue carefully followed that truth which is deliuered in the Historie; without adding to, or subtracting from, the general receiu'd opinion of things as we finde them in our common Annalles: holding it an impietie, to violate that publike Testimonie we haue, without more euident prooffe; or to introduce fictions of⁴⁰ our owne imagination, in things of this nature. Famæ rerum standum est. Though I knowe, in these publike actions, there are euer popular bruites, and opinions, which run according to the time & the bias of mens affections: and it is the part of an Historian, to recite them, not to rule th̄; especially, otherwise then the circumstances may induce: according to that modest saying; Nec affirmare sustineo de quibus dubito, nec subducere quæ accepi.

I haue onely vsed that poetical licence, of framing speaches to the persons of men according to their occasions;⁵⁰ as C. Salustius, and T. Liuius (though Writers in Prose, yet in that kinde Poets) haue, with diuers other antient and modern Writers, done before me. Wherin, though

they / haue incroched upon others rights, and usurpt a part that was not properly theirs : yet, seeing they hold so iust a proportion, with the nature of men, and the course of affayres ; they passe as the partes of the Actor (not the Writer) and are receiu'd with great approbation.

And although many of these Images are drawne with the pencil of mine owne conceiuing : yet I knowe, they are 60 according to the portraiture of Nature ; and carrie a resemblance to the life of Action, and their complexions whom they represent. For, I see, Ambition, Faction, and Affections, speake euer one Language, weare like colours (though in severall fashions) feed, and are fed with the same nutriments ; and only vary but in time.

Man is a creature of the same dimension he was : and how great and eminent soeuer hee bee, his measure and height is easie to be taken. And all these great actions are openly presented on the Stage of the World : where, 70 there are euer Spectators, who will iudge and censure how men personate those parts, which they are set to perform ; and so enter them in the Records of Memorie.

And if I haue erred somewhat in the draught of the young Q. Isabel (wife to Ric. 2) in not futing her passions to her yeares ; I must craue fauour of my credulous Readers ; and hope, the young Ladies of England (who peraduenture will thinke themseuies of age sufficient, at 14 yeares, to haue a feeling of their owne estates) will excuse me in that point. For the rest, 80 setting-aside those ornaments, proper to this kinde of Writing ; I haue faithfully obserued the Historie. Wherein, such as loue this Harmony of words, may finde, that a Subiect, of the greatest grauitie, will be aptly exprest : howsoeuer others (seeing in what sort Verse

hath beene idly abused) hold it but as a language fitting Lightnes and Vanitie.

For mine owne part, I am not so far in loue with this forme of Writing (nor haue I sworne Fealtie onely to Ryme) but that I may serue in any other state of ⁹⁰ Inuention, with what weapon of vtterance I will: and, so it may make good my minde, I care not. For, I see, Iudgement and Discretion (with whatsoeuer is worthy) carry their owne Ornaments, and are grac't with their owne beauties; be they apparayled in what fashion they will. And because I finde the common tongue of the world is Prose; I purpose in that kinde to write the Historie of England, from the Conquest: being encouraged thereunto, by many noble & worthy Spirits. Although Madame, I must not neglect to prosecute the other part of ¹⁰⁰ this Worke; being thus reuiued by your Goodnes: to whome, and to whose Noble Family, I hold my selfe euer bound; and will labour to doo you all the honor, and seruice I can.

SAM. DANYEL.



THE FIRST BOOKE.¹

THE ARGVMENT.

*What times fore-goe Richard the seconds Raigne,
The fatall causes of this ciuile VVarre,
His Uncles pride, his greedy Minions gaine,
Glosters revolt, and death, delivered are.
Herford, accus'd, exil'd, call'd-back againe,
Pretendes l'amend what others Rule did marre.
The King from Ireland hastes, but did no good ;
VVhil'st strange prodigious signes fore-token blood.*



I
Sing the ciuill Warres, tumultuous
Broyles,
And bloody factions of a mightie
Land :
Whose people hautie, proud with
forraine spoyles,
Vpon themselues turn-backe their
conquering hand ;

¹ "The Argvment of the First Booke": Argu^t, ll. 1, 4, : for , and .¹.

Whil'st Kin their Kin, Brother the Brother foyles ;
 Like Ensignes all against like Ensignes band ;
 Bowes against Bowes, the Crowne against the Crowne ;
 Whil'st all pretending right, all right's throwne downe.

2

What / furie, & what madnes held thee so,
 Deare *England* (too too prodigall of blood)
 To waste so much, and warre without a foe,
 Whilst *Fraunce*, to see thy spoyles, at pleasure stood !
 How much might'ſt thou haue purchast with leſſe woe,
 T'haue done thee honour and thy people good ?
 Thine might haue beene what-euer lies betweene
 The *Alps* and vs, the *Pyrenei* and *Rhene*.

3

Yet now what reason haue we to complaine ?
 Since hereby came the calme we did inioy ;
 The bliffe of thee *Eliza* ; happie gaine
 For all our losse : when-as no other way
 The Heauens could finde, but to vnite againe
 The fatall fev'red Families, that they
 Might bring foorth thee : that in thy peace might growe
 That glorie, which few Times could euer showe.

St. 1, l. 8, 'thrownen' ¹ : 'throwne' ² (1601, 1602).

St. 2, l. 2, 'people' for 'England' ¹, and 'to too' and without () :
 l. 5, 'might you' ¹ : l. 6, 'you . . . your Nephewes' ¹ : l. 7, 'Yours' ¹ :
 l. 8, 'The Perenes and Alps, Aquitayne, and Rheine' ¹.

St. 3, l. 1, 'And yet & God wee haue no cause to plaine' ¹, 'And yet
 what reason haue we to complaine' ² : l. 2, 'the quiet calme and ioye' ¹ :
 l. 4, 'for that' ¹ : l. 5, 'then vnite' ¹ : l. 8, 'no age' ¹, ².

→ Come sacred *Virtue*: I no *Muse*, but thee,
 Inuoke, in this great labour I intend.
 Doo thou inspire my thoughts, infuse in mee
 A power to bring the same to happie end.
 Rayse vp a worke, for later times to see,
 That may thy glorie, and my paynes commend.
 Make me these tumults rightly to rehearse:
 And giue peace to my life, life to my verse.

And thou *Charles Montioy* (who didst once afford ¹⁶⁰⁹
 Rest for my fortunes, on thy quiet shore;
 And cheer'dst mee on, these measures to record
 In grauer tones, then I had vf'd before)
 Beholde: my gratitude makes good my word
 Ingag'd to thee (although thou be no more)
 That I, who heretofore haue liu'd by thee,
 Doo giue thee now a roome to liue with me.

St. 4, l. 1, 'O sacred Goddesse' ¹; 'Thou' ²: l. 2, 'worke I now
 entend' ¹, ²: l. 7, 'Strengthen thy subiect strange things' ¹, ².

St. 5,—'. . . borne the worldes delight
 That hast receiu'd into . . .
 Me tempest-driuen fortune toffed wight
 Tir'd with expecting and could hope no more:
 And cheereſt on my better yeares to write
 A fadder Subject then I tooke before,
 Receiue the worke I consecrate to thee,
 Borne of that rest which thou doſt giue to me' ¹.

6

And MEMORIE, preferv'resse of things done,
 Come thou, vnfold the woundes, the wracke, the waste :
 Reueale to me how all the strife begunne
 Twixt *Lancaster* and *Yorke*, in ages past :
 How causes, counfels, and euent did runne,
 So long as these vnhappie times did last ;
 Vnintermixt with fiction's fantasies.
 I versifie the troth, not Poetize.

7

And to the ende wee may with better ease
 Discerne the true discourse ; vouchsafe to shewe,
 What were the times foregoing, neere to these,
 That these we may with better profit knowe :
 Tell, how the world fell into this disease,
 And how so great distemperature did growe.
 So shall we see, by what degrees it came,
 " How things, at full, do soone wex out of frame.

8

Ten Kings had, from the *Norman* Conqueror, raign'd,¹
 With intermixt and variable fate,
 When *England* to her greatest height attain'd
 Of powre, dominion, glorie, wealth, and State ;

¹ Which mat[ched] in the space of 260. years.

St. 6, l. 1, 'pref'eruisse' : l. 7, , removed after 'fictions' : l. 8, ; after
 'troth.'

St. 7, l. 2, 'progreffe ; here begin' : l. 8, 'grown . . . grow' !.

St. 8—' . . . now raignd of the Norman race
 With variable fortune turning chaunce,
 All in two hundred sixtie one yeaeres space,
 Then *Edward*, third of name and fift of Fraunce,
 Posset the crowne in fortunes highest grace ;
 And did to greatest state, his state aduaunce,

After it had, with much adoo, sustein'd
 The violence of Princes, with debate
 For titles, and the often mutinies
 Of Nobles, for their ancient liberties.

9

For, first, the *Norman*,¹ conquering all by might,
 By might was forc't to keepe what he had got ;
 Mixing our Customes and the forme of *Right*
 With foraine Constitutions he had brought :
 Maistering the mightie, humbling the poorer wight
 By all feuerest meanes that could be wrought :
 And, making the succession oubtfull, rent
 This new-got State, and left it turbulent.

When *England* might the largest limits see
 That euer any King attain'd but hee' :

and this cancelled stanza in ^{1, 2} as st. 9 :—

' For most of all the rest, toyld in vnrest,
 What with wrong titles, what with inward broyl,
 Hardlie a true establishment possest
 Of what they fought with such exceeding toyle :
 For why their power within itself opprest,
 Scarce could break forth to greatnes al that while ;
 Such was the childhood of this state did passe,
 Before it could attaine to what it wasse.'

St. 9, l. 3.—' Altring the lawes, chaunging . . .
 And placing barbarous Customes he had brought' :

l. 6, ' With grieuous taxes tyranie had fought' : ll. 7-8—

' Scarce laide th'affured grounds to build upon,
 The chaunge so hatefull and such course begon' !.

¹ 1067. Williā I. surnamed the Conqueror, the base sonne to Robert the sixt Duke of Normandie, raignd 20. yeares and 8. monthes, and left the Crowne of England to William his third sonne ; contrary to the custome of succession. (In ' William the Conqueror ' only in margin, and so throughout.)

IO

*VV*illiam his sonne,¹ tracing his fathers wayes
 (The great men spent in peace, or slaine in fight)
 Vpon depressed weaknes onely preyes,
 And makes his force maintaine his doubtfull right :
 His elder brothers clayme, vexing his dayes,
 His actions and exactions still incite :
 And giuing Beastes, what did to Men pertaine
 (Tooke for a Beast) himselfe in th'end was slaine.

II

His brother *Henrie*² next commands the State :
 Who, *Roberts* title better to reiect,
 Seekes to repacifie the peoples hate ;
 And with faire shewes, rather then in effect,
 Allayes those grieuances that heauie fate :
 Reformes the lawes, which soone hee did neglect ;
 And rest of sonnes, for whom he did prepare,
 Leaues crowne and strife, to *Maude* his daughters care.

¹ 1087. Willia 2. had wars with his elder brother Robert D. of Normandie : with whom his Uncle Otho, and many of the Nobilitie of Eng. tooke part. Hee was slaine hunting in the new forrest by Sir Walter Tirell, shooting at a deer, when he had raigned 13. yeares.

² 1100. Hen. 1. the youngest sonne of William 1. raigned 35. yeares, & 4 monthes, whose sonnes Will. & Ric. being drowned on the Seas, he leaues the Crow. to Maude first maried to the Emperour, Hen. 4. and after to Geffrey Plantagenet E. of Aniou.

St. 10, l. 1, 'the selfe-fame' : l. 2, 'The great outworne with war, or slaine in peace' : l. 3, 'Only vpon' : ll. 4-7, 'Treades down what was likeliest to increase,' 'Those that were left, being left to wofull daies' 'Had onely power to wish for some release,' 'Whilſt . . .' : l. 8, 'was after' .

St. 11, l. 1, 'Henrie his brother raignes when he had done' : l. 2, 'The Norman Duke the Conquerours first sonne,' 'Lightens in shew . . .' : l. 5, 'Those greeuances, his fatall race begunne' : l. 7, 'Whose sons being drownd' .

St Stephen / Henry

THE FIRST BOOKE.

15

I 2

Whom *Stephen*¹ his nephew (falsifying his Oath)
Preuents ; assayles the Realme ; obtaines the Crowne ;
Such tumults raysing as torment them both,
Whil'st both held nothing certainlye their owne :
Th'afflicted State (diuided in their troth
And partiall faith) most miserable growne,
Endures the while, till peace, and *Stephens* death,
Gau some calme leasure to recouer breath.

I 3

When *Henrie*,² sonne to *Maude* the Empresse, raignes,
And *England* into forme and greatnes brought,
Addes *Ireland* to this Scepter, and obtaines
Large Prouinces in *Fraunce* ; much treasure gote,
And from exactions here at home abstaynes :
And had not his rebellious children sought
T'imbroyle his age with tumults, he had beene
The happiest Monarch that this State had seene.

¹ 1135. Stephen son to the E. of Bloys & Adela daughter to Wil. I. invades the kingdō cōtēdes with Maude the Empresse for the succeffion, and raigned tumultuarly 18. years and 10. monethes.

² 1154. Hen. 2. sonne of Geffry Plantagenet E. of Aniou & Maude the Empresse associated his sonne Hen. in the Crown and gouernment : which turned to his great disturbance, and fet all his sonnes, Henry, Richard, Geffry, & Iohn against him. He raignd 34. yeare & 7. months.

St. 12, l. 3, 'Raysing such'¹: l. 8, 'Conclude some hope of quiet ; to take breath'².

St. 13— 'The sonne of *Maud* (from *Saxon* bloud deriu'd
By mothers line) succeeds th' vnrighful King,
Henrie the fecond, in whose raigne reuiu'd
Th' oppressed state, and first began to spring ;
And o if he had not bene too long liu'd
T' haue seene th' affliction that his age did bring
By his vngodly sonnes ; then happie man,
For they against him warr'd, for whom he wan' (', ').

14

Him, *Richard*¹ followes in the gouernment :
 Who much the glory of our Armes increast ;
 And all his fathers mighty treasure spent,
 In that deuoutfull Action of the *East* :
 Whereto, whiles he his forces wholly bent,
 Despight and treason his designes opprest ;
 A faithlesse brother, and a fatall King,
 Cut-off his growth of glory, in the spring.

15

Which wicked brother, contrary to course,
 False *John*² usurpes his *Nephew Arthur's* right ;
 Gets to the Crowne by craft, by wrong, by force ;
 Rules it with lust, oppression, rigour, might ;
 Murders the lawfull heire without remorse :
 Wherefore procuring all the worlds despight,
 A Tyrant loath'd, a homicide conueted,
 Poysoned he dyes, disgrac't and vnlamented.

¹ 1189. Richard went to the Holy warres, was king of Ierusalem whiles his brother John by the help of the King of France usurpt the crown of England. Hee was detained prisoner in Austria, redeemed, and reigned nine years. 9. months.

² 1199. K. John usurps the right of Arthur, sonne to Geffery his elder brother ; and raignes 17 yeares. Hee had warres with his Barons; who elected Lewis, Sonne to the K. of France.

St. 14, l. 1, 'But now comes *Richard* to succede his sire ' ' , ' , l. 3,
 His fathers limits bound not his desire' ' : ll. 4-6—

' He speeds the English Ensignes in the East,
 And whilst his vertues would haue raid him hyer,
 Treafon and malice his great actions ceast' ' .

In ' as st. 15—

15.

All *Ireland, Scotland, th' Iles of Orcades*
Poytiers, Guienne, Brittany hee got,
 And leades forth sorrow from it selfe to thease,
 Recouers strength at home so feeble brought :

16

Henrie¹ his fonne is chosen King, though young,
And *Lewes* of *France* (elected first) beguil'd ;
After the mighty had debated long,
Doubtfull to choose a straunger or a child :

Giues courage to the strong, to weaker ease ;
Ads to the state what *England* neuer sought :
Who him succeed (the forraine bloud out growne)
Are home born Kings by speech and birth our owne.

16.

So hitherto the new borne state in teares
Was in her raw and wayling infancie,
During a hundred two and twentie yeares
Vnder the hand of straungers tyranny :
And now some better strength and youth appeares
Which promises a glad recovery :
For hard beginnings haue the greatest states,
What with their owne, or neighbours debates.

17.

Euen like to *Rheine* which in his birth opprest,
Strangled almost with rocks and mightie hilis,
Workes out a way to come to better rest ;
Wars with the mountaines, striues against their wils,
Brings forth his streames in vnitie possest
Into the quiet bed he prouidle fils ;
Carrying that greatness which he cannot keepe
Vnto his death and buriall in the deepe :

18.

So did the worldes proud *Mijbres* Rome, at first
Strive with a hard beginning, warr'd with need ;
Forcing her strong Confiners to the worl,
And in her bloud her greatness first did heed :
So *Spaine* at home with *Moores* ere forth it burst
Did practize long and in itselue did bleed,
So did our state begin with her owne woundes
To try her strength ere it enlanguish'd her boundes. (So too in ².)

¹ 1216. Hen. 3. at 9. yeares of age, was Crowned King : and raigned 56. yeares.

With him, the Barrons (in these times growne strong)
 Warre for their auncient Lawes so long exil'd.
 He graunts the *Charter* that pretended ease ;
 Yet kept his owne, and did his State appease.

17

→ *Edward*¹, his sonne, a Martiall King, succeedes ;
 Iust, prudent, graue, religious, fortunate :
 Whose happy ordered Raigne most fertile breedes,
 Plenty of mighty spirits to strength his State :
 And worthy mindes, to manage worthy deedes,
 Th'experience of those times ingenerate :
 For, euer great imployment, for the great,
 Quickens the blood, and honour doth beget.

18

And had not his mis-led lasciuious Sonne,
Edward the second,² intermitted so
 The course of glory happily begunne
 (Which brought him and his fauorites to woe)
 That happy current without stop had runne
 Vnto the full of his sonne *Edwards* flowe :
 But, who hath often seene, in such a State,
 Father and Sonne like good, like fortunate ?

¹ 1272. Ed. 1. had the dominion ouer this whole Iland of Britaine : and
 raigned gloriously 34. yeares. 7. Moneths.

² 1307. Edward 2. abused by his Minions & debauched by his owne
 weaknesse, was deposed frō his gouernment, when he had reigned 19.
 yeares 6. moneths ; and was murthered in prisone.

19

But now, this great Succeder,¹ all reparies,
 And reinduc't that discontinued good :
 He builds vp strength & greatnes, for his heires,
 Out of the virtues that adornd his blood :
 He makes his Subiects Lords of more then theirs ;
 And sets their bounds farre wider then they stood.
 His powre, and fortune, had sufficient wrought,
 Could but the State haue kept what he had got.

20

And had his heire² surviu'd him in due course,
 What limits *England* hadist thou found ? what barre ?
 What world could haue refisted so great force ?
 O more then men ! (two thunderbolts of warre)
 Why did not Time your ioyned worth diuorce,
 T'haue made your feueral glories greater farre ?
 Too prodigall was Nature, thus to doe ;
 To spend in one Age, what should serue for two.

21

But now the Scepter, in this glorious State,
 Supported with strong powre and victorie,
 Was left vnto a Child³ ; ordain'd by fate
 To stay the course of what might growe too hie :
 Here was a stop, that Greatnesse did abate,
 When powre vpon so weake a base did lie.

¹ 1326. Edw. 3.

² Edward the black prince who died before his father.

³ Richard. 2. being but 11. yeares of age, was crowned K. of England.

1377.

St. 19, l. 2, 'rebrings-backe': ll. 7, 8—

' Could greatness haue but kept what he had gote
 It was enough he did, and what he wrought '.

For, least great fortune should presume too farre,
Such oppositions interposed are.

22

Neuer this Iland better peopled stood ;
Neuer more men of might, and minds addrest :
Neuer more Princes of the royall blood,
(If not too many for the publique Rest)
Nor euer was more treasure, wealth and good ;
Then when this *Richard* first, the Crowne possest ;
The seconf of that name, in two accurst :
And well we might haue mist all, but the first.

23

In this mans Raigne, began this fatal strife
(The bloudie argument whereof we treate)
That dearely cost so many'a Prince his life ;
And spoyld the weake, and euen consum'd the great :
That, wherein all confusyon was so rife,
As Memory euen grieues her to repeat,
And would that time might now this knowledge lose ;
But that tis good to learne by others woes.

24

Edward the third, being dead, had left this child,¹
(Sonne of his worthy sonne deceast of late)
The Crowne and Scepter of this Realme to wield :
Appointing the protectors of his State
Two of his sonnes, to be his better shield ;
Supposing Vncles, free from guile or hate,

¹ Richard the 2. son to the blacke prince.
St. 22. l. 7, 'Second of name, a name in two accurst' !
St. 23. l. 4, 'That' ¹ : l. 5, 'calamitie was rife' ¹ : l. 6, 'That' ¹ : l. 7,
'would now' ¹.
St. 24. l. 6, , removed before 'Vncles,' as in 1.

Would order all things for his better good,
In the respect and honour of their bloud.

25

Of these, *John*, Duke of *Lancaster*, was one,
(Too great a Subiect growne, for such a State.
The title of a King,¹ and glorie wonne
In great exploits his mind did eleuate
Aboue proportion kingdomes stand vpon :
Which made him push at what his issue gate)
The other, *Langley* :² whose mild temperatnes
Did tend vnto a calmer quietnesse.

✓ (N)

Yorke

Gloucester

26

With these, did *Woodstock*³ interpose his part ;
A man, for action violently bent,
And of a spirit averse, and ouer-thwart ;
Which could not sute a peace-full gouernment :
Whose euer-swelling, and tumultuous heart
Wrought his owne ill and others discontent.
And these had all the manage of affayres,
During the time the King was vnder yeares.

¹ The D. of Lancaster intitled K. of Castile in the right of his wife Constance eldest daughter to K. Peter.

² Edmond Earle of Cambridge ; after created D. of Yorke.

³ Thomas of Woodstocke after made D. of Gloucester.

St. 25, l. 3, 'what h' had done' : ll. 7, 8 —

'Edmond Langley, whose mild sprite
Affected quiet and a safe delight'

St. 26 — ' With these did interpose his proud vnrest
Thomas of Woodstocke, one most violent,
Impatient of command, of peace, of rest,
Whose brow would shew, that which his hart had ment :
His open malice and repugnant breft
Procur'd much mischiefe by his discontent :
And these had all the charge of king and state,
Till by himselfe he might it ordinate' ¹.

27

And in the first yeares of his gouernment,
 Things past, as first ; the warres in *France* proceed,
 Though not with that fame fortune and euent,
 Being now not followed with such carefull heed ;
 Our people here at home, growne discontent,
 Through great exactions, insurrections breed :
 || Priuate respects hindred the Common-weale :
 And idle ease doth on the mighty steale.

28

Too many Kings breed factions in the Court :
 The head too weake, the members growne too great.
 Which euermore doth happen in this sort,
 When Children rule ; the plague which God doth threat
 Vnto those Kingdomes which he will transport
 To other Lynes, or vtterly defeat :
 "For, the ambitious, once inur'd to raigne,
 "Can neuer brook a priuate state againe.

29

"And Kingdomes euer suffer this distresse,
 "Where one, or many, guide the infant King :
 "Which one or many (tasting this exceſſe
 "Of greatnesse & command) can neuer bring
 "Their thoughts againe t'obay, or to be leſſe.
 "From hence, these insolencies euer ſpring ;

St. 28, ll. 3, 4—

'O this is that which kingdomes doth transport,
 This plague the heauens do for iniufitice threat' !.

ll. 5, 6—'. . . who euer in this ſort
 Confound the ſtate their ancestors did get' !.

St. 29, l. 2, 'For' (bad).

"Contempt of others, whom they seek to foyle :
 "Then follow leagues, destruction, ruine, spoyle.

30

And whether they, which vnder-went this charge,
 Permit the King to take a youthfull vaine,
 That they their priuate better might inlarge :
 Or whether he himselfe would farther straine
 (Thinking his yeeres sufficient to discharge
 The gouernment) and so assym'd the raine :
 Or howsoeuer, now his eare he lends
 To youthfull counsell, and his lustes attends.

31

And Courts were neuer barren yet of those
 Which could with subtile traine, and apt aduice,
 Worke on the Princes weakenesse, and dispose
 Of feeble frailtie, easie to entice.
 And such, no doubt, about this King arose,
 Whose flatterie (the dangerous nurse of vice)
 Got hand vpon his youth, to pleasures bent :
 Which, led by them, did others discontent.

32

For, now his Vncles grew much to mislike
 These ill proceedings ; were it that they saw
 That others, fauour'd, did aspiring seeke
 Their Nephew from their counsels to withdraw,

St. 30, l. 1, 'Whether it were that they which had the charge' ¹ : l. 2.
 'Suffred to' ¹ : l. 6, '... presum'd to take the' ¹ : l. 7, 'We will not
 faie ; but' ¹.

St. 31, l. 4, 'easifft' ¹ : l. 8, 'lead' ¹.

(Seeing him of nature flexible, and weake)
 Because they onely would keepe all in awe ;
 Or that indeede they found the King and State
 Abuf'd by such as now in office fate.

33

Or rather else, they all were in the fault ;
 Th'ambitious Vncles, th'indiscreete young King,
 The greedie Councell, and the Minions naught ;
 And altogether did this tempest bring :
 Besides, the times, with all iniustice fraught,
 Concurr'd, with such confus'd misgouerning,
 That wee may truely say, This spoyld the State,
 " Youthfull Counsaile, priuate Gaine, partiall Hate.

34

And then the King, besides his iealousies
 Which nourish't were, had reason to be led
 To doubt his Vncles for their loyalties ;
 Since *John of Gaunt* (as was discouered)
 Had practisht his death in secret wife ;
 And *Gloster* openly becomes the head
 Vnto a league, who all in armes were bent
 T'oppose against the present gouernement ;

35

Pretending to remoue such men as were
 Accounted to abuse the king, and State.

St. 32, l. 5, 'meeke' !. St. 33, l. 6, 'in this' !.

St. 34, l. 1, ' . . . sure . . . plainly discouereth' ! : l. 2, 'Apparant
 cause his Vnckles to suspect' ! : l. 3, 'For *John of Gaunt* was said to seeke
 his death' ! : l. 4, 'By secret meanes, which came not to effect' ! : l. 5.
 'The Duke of *Gloster* likewise practiseth' ! : l. 6, 'In open world that all
 men might detect' ! : l. 7, 'And leagues his Nobles, and in greatest
 strength' ! : l. 8, 'Rifes in armes against him too at lengh' !.

Of whome, the chiefe they did accuse, was *Veere*,¹
 Made Duke of *Ireland*, with great grace of late ;
 And diuers else, who for the place they beare
 Obnoxious are, and subiect vnto hate.
 And these must be fearestred with all speed :
 Or else they vow'd, their swordes should doo the deed.

36

The King was forc't in that next Parliament,²
 To grant them what he durst not well refuse.
 For, thither arin'd they came, and fully bent
 To suffer no repulse, nor no excuse :
 And here they did accomplish their intent ;
 Where Iustice did her sword, not Ballance, vse.
 For, euen that sacred place they violate,
 Arresting all the Judges as they sate.

¹ Robert Veere Duke of Ireland.

² Ann. Reg. 11. the D. of Gloster with the E E. of Darby, Arudel, Nottingham, Warwicke, & other L L. hauing forced the K. to put from him all his officers of Court, at this Parliamēt, caused most of them to be executed : as, John Beauchamp L. Steward of his house, Sir Simon Burley, L. Chamberlaine, with many other. Also the L. chief Iustice was here executed, and all the Judges condēned to death, for maintaining the kings prerogative against these L L. & the constitutions of the last Parliament, in Ann. 10.

St. 35—‘Vnder pretence from him to take away,
 Such as they said the States oppressors weare,
 To whom the Realme has now become a prey ;
 The chief of whom they nam'd was *Robert Vere*
 Then Duke of Ireland ; bearing greatest sway
 About the king, who held him only dere :
 Him they would haue remou'd and diuers more,
 Or else would neuer lay downe armes they swore’ !.

St. 36, l. 8, ‘ And there arrest the Judges as they sate ’ !.

And here had many worthy men their ende,
Without all forme, or any course of Right.
" For, still these broyles, that publike good pretend,
" Worne most iniustice, being done through spight.
" For, those aggrieved euermore do bend
" Against such as they see of greatest might :
" Who, though they cannot helpe what will go ill ;
" Yet, since they may doo wrong, are thought they will.

And yet herein I meane not to excuse
The Iustices, and Minions of the King
(Who might their office and their grace abuse)
But blame the course held in the managing :
" For, great-men, ouer-grac't, much rigor vse ;
" Presuming fauorits discontentment bring :
" And disproportions harmonie do breake ;
" Minions, too great, argue a king too weake.

Now, that so much was granted, as was sought ;
A reconcilement made, although not ment,
Appeal'd them all in shewe, but not in thought,
Whilst euery one seem'd outwardly content :

St. 37, l. 1, 'Which foone with many others had' 1, 2 : l. 2, 'Cruelly
slaine without the course of right' 1, 'All put to death without the' 2 : l. 3,
'And still these warres' 1 : l. 4, 'for' 1 : l. 5, 'the' 1 : l. 6, 'thoſe whom' 1 :
l. 7, 'themſelues are wrong'd and often forſt' 1 : l. 8, 'for . . . can . . .
moſt . . . the worſt' 1.

St. 38, l. 1, 'I do not feeme herein' 1, 2 : l. 4, 'onely blame the
couſe of' 1 : colon for period accepted 1 : l. 5, 'too well' 1 : ; for .—
accepted 1 : l. 6, ' . . . miſchife euen' 1 : ; accepted for . ; so in next line .
l. 7, 'So that concluding I may boldly ſpeak' 1.

Though hereby king, nor peeres, nor people got
 More loue, more strength, or easier gouernment ;
 But euery day, things still succeeded worse.
 "For good from Kings is seldome drawne by force.

40

And thus it loe continued, till by chaunce
 The Queene (which was the Emperours daughter) di'de:
 When-as the King, t'establish peace with *Fraunce*,¹
 And better for home-quiet to prouide,
 Sought by contracting marriage to aduance
 His owne affayres, against his Vncles pride ;
 Tooke the young daughter² of King *Charles* to wife :
 Which after, in the end, ray'd greater strife.

41

For, now his vncle *Gloster* much repin'd,
 Against this French alliance and this peace :
 As either out of a tumultuous minde ;
 (Which neuer was content the warres should cease :)
 Or that he did dishonorable finde
 Those articles which did our State decrease ;
 And therefore storm'd because the Crowne had wrong :
 Or that he fear'd, the King would growe too strong.

42

But whatsoeuer mou'd him ; this is sure,
 Hereby he wrought his ruine in the end ;
 And was a fatall cause, that did procure
 The swift approaching mischieves that attend.

¹ Ann. Reg. 18. ² Ann. 20. Isabel, daughter to Charles 6.

St. 40, l. 1, 'this' ¹ (bad).

St. 41, l. 3. 'Hauing himselfe a working stirring' : l. 6, 'that . . . did our boundes' ¹.

St. 42, l. 1, 'Or' ¹.

For loe, the King no longer could indure
 Thus to be crost in what he did intend ;
 And therefore watcht but some occasion fit
 T'attach the Duke, when he thought least of it.

43

And Fortune, to set forward this intent,
 The Cont S. Paule,¹ from *France*, doth hither bring :
 Whom *Charles* the fixt employ'd in complement,
 To see the Queene, and to salute the King.
 To whom he shewes his Vncles discontent,
 And of his secret dangerous practising,
 How he his Subiectes sought to fulleuate,
 And breake the league with *Fraunce* concluded late.

44

To whom the Cont, most cunningly replies ;
 "Great Prince, it is within your power, with eafe
 "To remedy such feares, such ialousies,
 "And rid you of such mutiners as these ;
 "By cutting off that, which might greater rife,
 "And now at first, preuenting this diseafe,
 "And that before he shall your wrath disclose ;
 "For, who threatens first, meanes of reuenge doth lose.

45

"First take his head, then tell the reason why :
 "Stand not to finde him guiltie by your lawes ;
 "You easier shall with him your quarrell trie
 "Dead then aliue, who hath the better cause.

¹ Valeran E. of S. Paule who had maried the kings halfe sister.

St. 43, l. 1, 'now to further' : l. 2, 'The great Earle of S. Paule' :
 l. 3, 'From *Charles* of *France* vnto the yong Q. fent' : l. 4, '... both her'
 St. 44, l. 1, 'futtle Earle forthwith' : l. 5, , for : accepted from '
 St. 45, l. 1, , for ; accepted ¹ : l. 2, ; for . ; l. 3, 'Easier you shall' !.

" For, in the murmuring vulgar, vsually
 " This publique course of yours compassion drawes ;
 " Especially in cases of the great :
 " Which worke much pitty, in the vndiscreat.

46

" And this is sure, though his offence be such :
 " Yet doth calamitie attract commorse :
 " And men repine at Princes blood-shed much,
 " (How iust-foeuer) iudging tis by force.
 " I know not how their death giues such a tuch,
 " In those that reach not to a true discourse ;
 " As so shall you, obseruing formall right,
 " Be held still as vniust, and win more spight.

47

" And, oft, the cause may come preuented so :
 " And therefore when tis done, let it be heard.
 " For, thereby shall you scape your priuate wo.
 " And satisfie the world too, afterward.
 " What neede you weigh the rumors that shall go ?
 " What is that breath, being with your life compar'd ?
 " And therefore, if you will be rul'd by me,
 " In secret fort, let him dispatched bee.

48

And then arraigne the chiefe of those you finde
 Were of his faction secretly compact :
 Who may so well be handled in their kinde ;
 As their confessions, which you shall exact,

St. 46, l. 5, , after 'how' removed, as in 'l. 7, 'That'': l. 8, 'Still thought' '.

St. 47, l. 8, 'Strangled or poison'd secret let him' '.

St. 48, l. 3, 'Whom you may wisely order in such' ': l. 4, 'That you maie such confessions then' '.

May both appease the aggrieved peoples minde,
 And make their death to aggrauate their fact.
 So shall you rid your selfe of dangers quite ;
 And shew the world, that you haue done but right.

49

This counsell, vttred vnto such an eare
 As willing listens to the safest wayes,
 Workes on the yeelding matter of his feare ;
 Which easilly to any course obayes.
 For, euery Prince, seeing his daunger neere,
 By any meanes his quiet peace affaies.
 " And still the greatest wrongs, that euer were,
 " Haue then been wrought, when Kings were put in feare.

50

Call'd in with publique pardon, and release,
 The *Duke of Gloster*, with his complices ¹ ;
 All tumults, all contentions seem to cease,
 The land rich, people pleas'd, all in happinesse ;
 When sodainely *Gloster* came caught, with peace ;
VVarwicke, with profered loue and promisess :
 And *Arundell* was in, with cunning brought :
 Who else abrode, his safetie might haue wrought.

¹ At the parliament, in Anno 11. the LL. of the league with Gloster being pardoned for their opposing against the kings proceedings, were quiet till Anno 21 ; when vpon report of a new conspiracie, they were surprised.

St. 48, l. 5, 'As both you may appeafe the peoples' ; l. 6, 'And by . . . much . . . the'.

St. 50—53 not in '95.

51

Long was it not, ere *Gloster* was conuayd
 To *Calice*, and there strangled secretly¹ :
VVarwicke and *Arundell* close prisoners laid,
 Th'espaciall men of his confederacie :
 Yet *VVarwickes* teares and base confessions staide
 The doome of death ; and came confin'd thereby,
 And so prolongs this not long base-begg'd breath :
 But *Arundell* was put to publique death.

52

Which publique death (receiu'd with such a cheare,
 As not a sigh, a looke, a shrink bewrayes
 The least felt touch of a degenerous feare)
 Gauie life to Enuie, to his courage prayse ;
 And made his stout-defended cause appeare
 With such a face of Right, as that it layes
 The side of wrong t'wards him, who had long since
 By Parliament² forgiuen this offence :

¹ Mowbray E. Marshal, after made Duke of Norfolke, had the charge of dispatching the D. of Gloster, at Calice.

² The K. had by Parliament before pardoned the D. and those two Earles : yet was the pardon reuoked.

St. 55 here—‘ And long it was not ere he apprehendes
 ‘ The Duke, who close to *Calice* was conuici’d,
 ‘ And th’ Earles of *Arundell* and *Warwicke* sendes,
 ‘ Both in close prissons strongly to be laid ;
 ‘ And soone the Duke his life vnquiet endes,
 ‘ Strangled in secret ere it was bewraide ;
 ‘ And *Arundell* was put to publike death,
 ‘ But *Warwicke* by great meanes he banishest’ .

53

And in the vnconceiuing vulgar sort,
 Such an impression of his goodnes gaue
 As Sainted him, and ray'd a strange report
 Of miracles effected on his Graue :
 Although the Wife (whome zeale did not transport)
 " Knew, how each great example still must haue
 " Something of wrong, a taste of violence ;
 " Wherewith, the publique quiet doth dispense.

54

The King foorth-with prouides him of a Guard ;
 A thousand Archers daily to attend :
 Which now vpon the aet he had prepar'd,
 As th'argument his actions to defend :
 But yet the world hereof conceiu'd so hard,
 That all this nought auaild him in the end.
 " In vaine, with terror is he fortifyed,
 " That is not guarded with firme loue beside.

55

Now storne his grieued Vncles, though in vaine ;
 Not able better courses to aduise.
 They might their grieuance inwardly complaine ;
 But outwardly they needes must temporise.
 The King was great ; and they shold nothing gaine
 T'attempt reuenge, or offer once to rise :
 This league with *Fraunce* had made him now so strong,
 That they must needes as yet indure this wrong.

St. 54, l. 1, ' And for his perfon he procures ' !.

St. 55, l. 1, ' his vncles albeit ' ! : l. 2, ' For that no remedy they could
 deuise ' ! : l. 3, ' sorrowes ' !.

56

For, like a Lion that escapes his boundes,
 Hauing beene long restrain'd his vse to stray,
 Ranges the restles woods, stayes on no groûd,
 Riots with blood-shed, wantons on his prae ;
 Seekes not for neede, but in his pride to wound,
 Gloryng to see his strength and what he may :
 So this vnbridled King (freed of his feares)
 In liberty, himself thus wildely beares.

57

For, standing now alone, he fees his might
 Out of the compasse of respectiue awe ;
 And now beginnes to violate all right,
 While no restraining feare at hand he saw.
 Now he exacts of all, wastes in delight,
 Riots in pleasure, and neglects the law :
 He thinkes his Crowne is licensf to do ill.
 " That leſſe should lift, that may do what it wil.

58

Thus b'ing transp[or]ted in this sensuall course, v
 No friend to warne, no counsell to withstand,
 He still proceedeth on from bad to worse ;
 Sooth'd in all actions that he tooke in hand,
 By ſuch as all impietie did nurſe,
 Commending euer what hee did command.
 " Vnhappie Kings ! that neuer may be taught
 " To know themſelues, or to diſcerne their fault.¹

¹ — *Nihil eft quod credere de ſe, non poſſit, cum laudatur, dijs æqua potefias.*

59

And whilst this course did much the kingdome daunt,
 The Duke of *Herford*¹ being of courage bolde,
 As sonne and heire to mighty *John of Gaunt*,
 Utters the passion which he could not holde
 Concerning these oppressions, and the want
 Of government : which he to *Norfolke*² told ;
 To th'end, he (being great about the king)
 Might do some good, by better counselling.

60

Hereof doth *Norfolke* presently take hold,
 And to the king the whole discourse relate :
 Who, not conceipting it, as it was told,
 But iudging it proceeded out of hate ;
 Disdeigning deeply to be so controwl'd,
 That others should his Rule preiudicate,
 Charg'd *Herford* therewithall : who re-accus'd
Norfolke, for words of treason he had vf'd.

¹ Hen. Bollingbroke of Hereford.

² Tho. Mowbray D. of Norfolke.

St. 59, l. 1, 'All sylent grieue at what is donne' : l. 2, 'then' : l. 3,
 'And worthily great Iohn of *Gaunts* first sonne' : l. 5, 'In sad discourse
 vpon this course begun' : l. 6, 'Which he to *Mowbray* Duke of Norfolke
 told' .

St. 60— 'The faithles Duke that presentlie takes hold
 Of such aduantage to insinuate,
 Haftes to the king, peruerting what was told,
 And what came of good minde he makes it hate :
 The King that might not now be so controld
 Or censur'd in his course, much frets thereat :
 Sendes for the Duke, who doth such wordes deny
 And craunes the combate of his enemy'—

and in margin 'Froisart, Pol. Virg., and Hall deliuer it in this fort' .

St. 60, 61 not in !. So ?.

61

Norfolke denies them peremptorily.
Herford recharg'd, and supplicates the king,
 To haue the combate of his enemie ;
 That by his sword hee might approue the thing.
Norfolke desires the same, as earnestly :
 And both with equall courage menacing
 Reuenge of wrong ; that none knew which was free :
 For, times of faction, times of flauder bee.

62

The combate granted, and the day assignd,
 They both in order of the field appeare,
 Most richly furnisht in all Martiall kinde,
 And at the point of intercombate were ;
 When (lo) the king chang'd sodainely his minde,
 Casts downe his warder to arrest them there ;
 As being adui'd a better way to take,
 Which might for his more certaine safetie make.

63

For, now considering (as it likely might)
 The victorie should hap on *Herfords* side
 (A man most valiant and of noble sprite,
 Belou'd of all, and euer worthy tri'd)
 How much he might be grac't in publique figh't,
 By such an act, as might aduance his pride,
 And so become more popular by this ;
 Which he feares, too much he already is.

St. 62, l. 1, 'Which straight was' : l. 2, 'When' : l. 3, 'To
 right each other as th'euent should find' : l. 4, 'And now both euen at
 point of combat' : l. 6, '... and so staias' : l. 7, 'As better now
 adui'd what' : l. 8, '... assured safety' .

64

And therefore he resolues to banish both,
 Though th'one in chiefest fauour with him stood,
 A man he dearely lou'd ; and might be loth
 To leaue him, that had done him so much good :¹
 Yet hauing cause to do as now he doth,
 To mitigate the enuie of his blood,
 Thought best to lose a friend, to rid a foe ;
 And such a one, as now he doubted so.

65

And therefore to perpetuall exile hee
Mowbray condemnes ; *Herford* but for ten yeares :
 Thinking (for that the wrong of this decree,
 Compar'd with greater rigour, lesse appeares)
 It might of all the better liked bee :
 But yet such murmuring of the fact he heares,
 That he is faine soure of the ten forgive,
 And iudg'd him sixe yeares in exile to liue.

66

At whose departure hence out of the Land,
 How did the open multitude reueale
 The wondrous loue they bare him vnder-hand !
 Which now, in this hote passion of their zeale,
 They plainly shew'd ; that all might vnderstand
 How deare he was vnto the common weale.
 They feard not to exclaine against the King ;
 As one, that fought all good mens ruining.

¹ Mowbray was banished the very day (by the course of the yeere) whereon he murthered the D. of Gloucester.

67

Vnto the shore, with teares, with sighes, with mone,
 They him conduct ; cursing the bounds that stay
 Their willing feete, that would haue further gone,
 Had not the fearefull *Ocean* stopt their way :
 " Why *Neptune*, Hast thou made vs stand alone
 " Diuided from the world, for this, say they ?
 " Hemd-in, to be a spoyle to tyrannie,
 " Leauing affliction hence no way to flie ?

68

" Are we lockt vp, poore soules, heere to abide
 " Within the waterie prison of thy waues,
 " As in a fold, where subiect to the pride
 " And lust of Rulers we remaine as flaues ?
 " Here in the reach of might, where none can hide
 " From th'eye of wrath, but onely in their Graues ?
 " Happie confiners you of other landes,
 " That shift your foyle, and oft scape tyrants hands.

69

" And must we leauue him here, whom here were fit
 " We shoulde retaine, the pillar of our State ?
 " Whose vertues well deserue to gourne it,
 " And not this wanton young effeminate.
 " Why shoulde not he in Regall honour sit,
 " That best knowes how a Realme to ordinate ?
 " But, one day yet, we hope thou shalt bring backe
 " (Deare *Bullingbrooke*) the Iustice that we lacke.

St. 67, l. 5, ; after 'Neptune' removed, and , substituted.
 St. 69, l. 1, 'Ah . . . that' !.

70

" Thus muttered, loe, the malecontented sort ;
 " That loue Kings best, before they haue them, still ;
 " And neuer can the present State comport,
 " But would as often change, as they change will.
 For, this good Duke had wonne them in this sort
 By succ'ring them, and pittyng of their ill,
 That they supposed streight it was one thing,
 To be both a good Man, and a good King.

71

When-as the grauer sort that saw the course,
 And knew that Princes may not be controld,
 Lik't well to suffer this, for feare of worse ;
 " Since, many great, one Kingdome cannot hold.
 For, now they saw, intestine strife, of force,
 The apt-diuided State intangle would,
 If he should stay whom they would make their head,
 By whom the vulgar body might be led.

72

" They saw likewise, that Princes oft are faine
 " To buy their quiet, with the price of wrong :
 And better 'twere that now a few complaine,
 Then all should mourne, aswell the weake as strong :
 Seeing still how little Realmes by chaunge do gaine ;
 And therefore learned by obseruing long,
 " T'admire times past, follow the present will,
 " Wish for good Princes, but t'indure the ill.

St. 70, l. 4, ' oft . . . their '.

St. 72, l. 5, , removed after ' little,' as in '.

73

For, when it nought auailes, what folly then
To striue against the current of the time ?
Who will throwe downe himselfe, for other men,
That make a ladder by his fall to clime ?
Or who would seeke t'imbroyle his Country, when
He might haue rest ; suffering but others crime ?
“ Since wife men euer haue preferred farre
“ Th'vnustest peace, before the iustest warre.

74

Thus they considered, that in quiet sate,
Rich or content, or else vnfitt to striue :
Peace-louer wealth, hating a troublous State,
Doth willing reasons for their rest contrive :
But, if that all were thus considerate,
How shoulde in Court, the great, the fauour'd thriue ?
Factions must be, and these varieties :
And some must fall, that other-some may rise.

75

But, long the Duke remain'd not in exile,
Before that *John of Gaunt*, his father, dies :
Vpon whose state the king seif'd now, this while,
Disposing of it, as his enemies.
This open wrong no longer could beguile
The world, that saw these great indignities.
Which so exasperates the mindes of all,
That they resolu'd, him home againe to call.

76

For, now they saw, t'was malice in the King
 (Transported in his ill-conceiued thought)
 That made him so to prosecute the thing
 Against all law, and in a course so naught.
 And this aduantage to the Duke did bring
 More fit occasions ; whereupon he wrought.
 " For, to a man so strong, and of such might,
 " He giues him more, that takes away his right.

77

The King in this meane time¹ (I know not how)
 Was drawne into some actions, foorth the Land,
 T'appease the *Iriſh*, that reuolted now :
 And, there attending what he had in hand,
 Neglects those parts from whence worse dangers growe ;
 As ignorant, how his affayres did stand :
 Whether the plot was wrought it should be so,
 Or that his fate did draw him on to go.

78

Most fure it is, that hee committed here
 An ignorant and idle ouerfight ;
 Not looking to the Dukes proceedings there,
 Being in the Court of *Fraunce*, where best he might ;
 Where both the King and all assured were
 T'haue stopt his course, being within their right ;
 But now he was exil'd, he thought him sure ;
 And, free from farther doubting, liv'd secure.

¹ An. Reg. 22.

St. 76, l. 6, 'Fitter occasions '¹.

St. 78, l. 1, 'Certaine '¹, ².

79

So blindes the sharpest counfels of the wife
 This ouershadowing Prouidence on hie ;
 And dazleth all their clearest fighted eyes,
 That they see not how nakedly they lie.
 There where they little thinke, the storme doth rise,
 And ouercasts their cleare securitie :
 When man hath stopt all wayes saue onely that,
 Which (as leaſt doubted) Ruine enters at.

80

And now was all disorder in th'exceſſe,
 And whatſoever doth a change portend ;
 As, idle luxurie, and wantonnesſe,
Proteus-like varying Pride, vaine without ende :
 Wrong-worker *Riot* (motiue to opprefſe)
 Endleſs Exaſtions, which the idle ſpend ;
 Conſumming Vſurie, and credits crackt,
 Call'd-on this purging Warre, that many lackt.

81

Then Ill-perfwading want, in Martiall mindes,
 And wronged patience (long opprefſt with might)
 Loofenes in all (which no religion bindes)
 Commaunding force (the meaſure made of *Right*)
 Gauſ ſuell to this fire, that eaſie findes
 The way t'inflame the whole indangerd quite :
 These were the publique breeders of this Warre ;
 By which, ſtill greatest States confounded are.

St. 79, l. 3, 'dazeleth the' : l. 8, 'leaſt ſuſpected'.

82

For, now this peace with *Fraunce* had shut in here
 The ouergrowing humours Warres do spend.
 For, where t'euacuate no imployments were,
 Wider th'vnwieldy burthen doth distend,
 Men, wholly vf'd to warre, peace could not beare ;
 As knowing no other course, whereto to bend :
 For, brought vp in the broyles of these two Reames,
 They thought best fishing still, in troubled stremes.

83

Like to a Riuier, that is stopt his course,
 Doth violate his bankes, breakes his owne bed,
 Destroys his bounds, and ouer-runs, by force,
 The neighbour-fieldes, irregularly spred :
 Euen so this sodaine stop of Warre doth nurse
 Home broyles, within it selfe, from others led :
 So dangerous the change hereof is tri'd
 Ere mindes 'come soft, or otherwife imploid.

84

But, all this makes for thee, o *Bullingbrooke*,
 To worke a way vnto thy Soueraintie.
 This care, the Heauens, Fate, and Fortune tooke,
 To bring thee to thy Scepter easilly.
 Vpon thee fall's that hap, which him forsooke,
 Who, crownd a King, a King yet must not die.
 Thou wert ordaind, by Prouidence, to rayse
 A quarrell, lasting longer then thy dayes.

St. 82, l. 6, 'course else where' !

85

For, now this absent Lord, out of his Land
 (Where though he shew'd great sprite and valor then ;
 Being attended with a worthy band
 Of valiant Peeres, and most couragious men)
 Gauē time to them at home, that had in hand
 Th'vngodly worke, and knew the seafon when :
 Who faile not to aduise the Duke with speed ;
 Solliciting to what hee foone agreed.

86

Who prefently,¹ vpon so good report,
 Relyng on his friends fidelitie,
 Conueyes himselfe out of the French Kings Court,
 Vnder pretence to go to *Britannie* :
 And, with his followers, that to him resort,
 Landed in *England*: Welcom'd ioyfully
 Of th'altring vulgar, apt for changes still ;
 As headlong carried with a present will.

87

And com'n to quiet shore, but not to rest ;
 The first night of his ioyfull landing here,
 A fearesfull vision doth his thoughts moleft² :
 Seeming to see in reuerent forme appeare

¹ The D. being banished in Septēber, landed in the beginning of Iulie, after, at Rauenpurre, in Yorkefhire, some say but with 60. men, other with 3000. and 8. shippes set forth and furnished by the Duke of Brittaine. Ann. Reg. 22.

² The Genius of England appeares to Bullingbrooke.

St. 86, l. 1, 'For'¹ : l. 2, 'He doth with cunning traine and pollicy'¹ :
 l. 3, 'Conuay'¹.
 St. 87, l. 1, 'com'd'¹,²:

A faire and goodly woman all distrest ;
 Which, with full-weeping eyes and rented haire,
 Wringing her hands (as one that griev'd and prayd)
 With sighes commixt with words, vnto him said ;

88

“ O ! whither dost thou tend, my vnkinde Sonne ?
 “ What mischiefe dost thou go-about to bring
 “ To her, whose *Genius* thou here lookst vpon,
 “ Thy Mother-countrey, whence thy selfe didst spring ?
 “ Whither thus dost thou, in ambition, run,
 “ To change due course, by soule disordering ?
 “ What bloodshed, what turmoyles dost thou commence,
 “ To last for many wofull ages hence ?

89

“ Stay here thy foote, thy yet vngilty foote,
 “ That canst not stay when thou art farther in,
 “ Retire thee yet vnstain'd, whil'st it doth boote :
 “ The end, is spoyle, of what thou dost begin :
 ▷ “ Iniustice neuer yet tooke lasting roote,
 “ Nor held that long, Impietie did win.
 “ The babes, vnborne, shall (ð) be borne to bleed
 “ In this thy quarrell, if thou do proceede.

90

This said, she ceast : when he in troubled thought
 Griev'd at this tale and sigh't, and thus replies ;
 “ Deare Countrey, ð I haue not hither brought
 “ Theſe Armes to spoyle, but for thy liberties :

St. 87, l. 6, ‘rent-white’¹ : l. 8, ‘it seem'd ſhe ſaid’¹.
 St. 88, l. 5, ‘O whither doſt thou’¹ : l. 7, ‘ð what broyles’¹.

“ The sinne be on their head, that this haue wrought ;
 “ Who wrongd me first, and thee do tyrannise.
 “ I am thy Champion, and I seeke my right :
 “ Prouok’t I am to this, by others spight.

91

“ This, this pretence, saith shee, th’ambitious finde
 “ To smooth iniustice, and to flatter wrong.
 “ Thou dost not know what then will be thy minde,
 “ When thou shalt see thy selfe aduanc’t and strong.
 “ When thou hast shak’t off that, which others bindে ;
 “ Thou foone forgettest what thou learnedst long.
 “ Men do not know what then themselues will bee,
 “ When-as, more then themselues, themselues they see.

92

And herewithall, turning about he wakes,
 Lab’ring in spirit, troubled with this strange sight :
 And muf’d a while, waking aduisement takes
 Of what had past in sleepe and silent night :
 Yet hereof no important reck’ning makes,
 But as a dreame that vanisht with the light :
 The day designes, and what he had in hand
 Left it to his diuerted thoughts vnscand.

93

Doubtfull at first, he warie doth proceed ;
 Seemes not t’affeet that, which he did effect ;
 Or else perhaps seemes, as he meant indeed,
 Sought but his owne, and did no more expect.
 Then, Fortune, thou art guiltie of his deed :
 That didst his state aboue his hopes erect :
 And thou must beare some blame of his great sinne ;
 That leftst him worse, then when he did beginne.

94

Thou didst conspire with Pride, and with the Time,
 To make so easie an ascent to wrong,
 That he who had no thought so hie to clime
 (With fauouring comfort still allur'd along)
 Was with occasion thrust into the crime ;
 Seeling others weakenes and his part so strong.
 " And who is there, in such a case that will
 " Do good, and feare, that may liue free with ill ?

95

We will not say nor thinke, O *Lancaster*,
 But that thou then didst meane as thou didst sweare
 Vpon th'Euangelists at *Doncaster*,
 In th'eye of heauen, and that assembly theare,
 That thou but as an vpright orderer,
 Sought'st to reforme th'abused Kingdome here,
 And get thy right, and what was thine before ;
 And this was all ; thou would'st attempt no more :

96

Though we might say, and thinke, that this pretence
 Was but a shadow to the intended act ;
 Because th'euent doth argue the offence,
 And plainly seemes to manifeit the fact :
 For that hereby thou mightst win confidence
 With those, whom else thy course might hap distract,
 And all suspicion of thy drift remoue ;
 " Since easily men credit whom they loue.

97

But, God forbid wee should so neerly pry
 Into the lowe-deepe-buried sinnes long past,
 T'examine and conferre iniquitie,
 Whereof faith would no memorie should last :
 That our times might not haue t'exemplifie
 With aged staines, but, with our owne shame cast,
 Might thinke our blot the first, not done before ;
 That new-made sinnes might make vs blush the more. ↪

98

And let vnwresting Charitie beleue
 That then thy oath with thy intent agreed ;
 And others faith, thy faith did first deceiue ;
 Thy after-fortune forc't thee to this deed.
 And let no man this idle censure giue,
 Because th'euent proues so, 'twas so decreed.
 " For, oft our counsels sort to other end,
 " Then that which fraultie did at first intend.

99

Whil'ft those that are but outward lookers on
 (Who sildome found these mysteries of State)
 Deeme things were so contriv'd as they are done,
 And hold that policie, which was but fate ;
 Imagining, all former acts did run
 Vnto that course they see th'effects relate ;
 Whil'ft still too short they come, or cast too far,
 " And make these great men wiser then they ar. ↪

St. 97, l. 6, , for ; '—accepted.

St. 98, l. 7, o (bad).

St. 99, l. 2, 'cannot'': l. 3, 'Deemes'': l. 4, 'Holding'': l. 5, 'Wondering how strange twas wrought, how clofe begun'': l. 6, 'And thinke all actions else did tend to that'': l. 7, 'When o how'': l. 8, 'Making the happy'.

100

But, by degrees he ventures now on blood ;
 And sacrific'd, vnto the peoples loue,
 The death of those that chiefe in enuie stood :
 As, th'Officers (who first these dangers proue)
 The Treasurer, and those whom they thought good,¹
Busby and *Greene*, by death he must remoue :
 These were the men, the people thought, did cause
 Those great exactions, and abus'd the lawes.

101

This done, his cause was preach with learned skill,
 By *Arundel*, th'Archbishop² : who there show'd
 A Pardon sent from *Rome*, to all that will
 Take part with him, and quit the faith they ow'd
 To *Richard* ; as a Prince vnfit and ill :
 On whom the Crowne was fatally bestow'd.
 And easie-yeelding zeale was quickly caught,
 With what the mouth of grauity had taught.

102

O that this power, from euerlasting giuen
 (The great alliance made twixt God and vs ;
 Th'intelligence that earth doth hold with heauen)
 Sacred Religion ; ô that thou must thus
 Be made to smooth our wayes vniust, vneuen ;³
 Brought from aboue, earth-quarrels to discusse !
 Must men beguile our soules, to winne our wils,
 And make our Zeale the furtherer of ils ?

¹ The D. put to death VVilliā Scroope E. of Wiltshire, Treasurer of Eng. with Sir Hen. Greene, & Sir Iohn Busby, for misgouerning the king and the Realme.

² Th. Arundel Archbish. of Canterbury.

³ *Bis peccat, qui pretextu Religionis peccat.*

St. 101, l. 2, 'And th'Archbishop of Canterbury'.

103

But, the ambitious, to aduance their might,
Dispense with heauen, and what Religion would.
“The armed will finde right, or els make right ;
If this meanes wrought not, yet an other shoule.
And this and other now do all incite
To strength the faction that the Duke doth hold :
Who easily obtained what he sought ;
His vertues and his loue so greatly wrought.

104

The King, still busied in this *Irish* warre
(Which by his valour there did well succeed)
Had newes, how here his Lords reuolted are,
And how the Duke of *Herford* doth proceede :
In these, affaires he feares are growne too farre ;
Hastes his returne from thence with greatest speed :
But was by tempests, windes, and seas debarred ;
As if they likewise had against him warr'd.

105

But, at the length (though late) in Wales he lands :
Wherè, thoroughly inform'd of *Henries* force,
And well aduertis'd how his owne case stands
(Which to his griefe he fees tends to the worse)
He leaues t'*Aumarle*,¹ at *Milford*, all those bandes
He brought from *Ireland* : taking thence his course
To *Conway*² (all disguis'd) with fourteene more,
To th'Earle of *Salisbury*, thither sent before :

¹ Edward D. of Aumerle Sonne to the D. of Yorke (in 'The Duke of Aumarle').

² Conway Castle in Wales.

106

Thinking, the Earle¹ had rayf'd some Armie there ;
 Whom there he findes forsaken all alone :
 ▷ The forces, in those parts which leuied were,
 Were closely shrunke away, disperst and gone.
 The king had stayd too long ; and they, in feare,
 Resolued euerie man to shift for one.
 At this amaf'd, such fortune he laments ;
 Foresees his fall, whereto each thing consents.

107

In this disturb'd tumultuous broken State,
 Whil'ft yet th'euent stood doubtfull what should bee ;
 Whilst nougħt but headlong running to debate,
 And glittering troupes and armor, men might see :
 Furie, and feare, compassion, wrath, and hate,
 Confus'd through all the land, no corner free ;
 The strong, all mad, to strife, to ruine bent ;
 The weaker waild : the aged they lament,

108

And blame their many yeeres that liue so long,
 To see the horrour of these miseries.
 Why had not we (said they) di'd with the strong,
 In forraine fieldes, in honourable wise,
 In iuft exploits, and noble without wrong,
 And by the valiant hand of enemies ?
 And not thus now referued, in our age,
 To home-confusion, and disordered rage.

¹ Montague E. of Salisburie.
 St. 106, l. 4, 'B'ing' !. St. 108, l. 5, 'lawfull' !.

109

Vnto the Temples flocke the weake, deuout,
Sad wayling Women ; there to vow and pray
For husbands, brothers, or their sonnes gone out
To blood-shed : whom nor teares, nor loue could stay.
Here, graue religious Fathers (which much doubt
The fad euent these broyles procure them may)
As Prophets warne, exclaine, diss Wade these crimes,
By the examples fresh of other times.

110

And (ô !) what, do you now prepare, said they,
Another Conquest, by these fatall wayes ?
What, must your owne hands make your selues a pray
To desolation, which these tumults rayfe ?
What *Dane*, what *Norman*, shall prepare his way
To triumph on the spoyle of your decayes ?
That, which nor *Fraunce*, nor all the world, could do
In vnion, shall your discord bring you to ?

111

Conspire against vs, neighbour nations all,
That enuie at the height whereto w'are growne :
Coniure the barbarous North, and let them call
Strange furie from farre distant shores vnkownne ;
And let them altogether on vs fall,
So to diuert the ruine of our owne :
That we, forgetting what doth so incense,
May turne the hand of malice, to defence.

112

Calme these tempestuous spirits, O mighty Lord ;
 This threatening storme that ouer-hangs the Land.
 Make them consider, ere they 'vnsheath the sword,
 How vaine is th'earth, this point whereon they stand ;
 And with what sad calamities is stor'd
 The best of that, for which th'Ambitious band :
 " Labor the ende of labor, strife of strife ;
 " Terror in death, and horrour after life.

113

Thus they in zeale, whose humbled thoughts were
 Whil'st in this wide-spread volume of the skies, [good,
 ▷ The booke of Prouidence disclosed stood ;
 Warnings of wrath, foregoing miseries
 In lines of fire and characters of blood,
 Their fearefull formes in dreadfull flames arise ;
 Amazing Comets, threatening Monarchs might,
 And new-seene Starres, vnknowne vnto the night.

114

Red fierie Dragons in the ayre do flye,
 And burning Meteors, pointed-streaming lightes :
 Bright Starres in midst of day appeare in skie,
 Prodigious monsters, ghastly fearefull sights :
 Strange Ghostes, and apparitions terrifie :
 The wofull mother her owne birth affrightes ;
 Seeing a wrong deformed infant borne,
 Grieues in her paines, deceiv'd in shame doth mourne.

St. 113, l. 6, 'Their' for 'There.'

115.

The earth, as if afeard of blood and wounds,
 Trembles in terror of these falling blos :
 The hollow concaves giue out groning sounds,
 And sighing murmures, to lament our woes :
 The Ocean, all at discord with his boundes,
 Reiterates his strange vntimely flowes :
 Nature all out of course, to checke our course,
 Neglects her worke, to worke in vs remorse.

116

So great a wracke vnto it felse doth, lo,
 Disorder'd proud mortalitie prepare, ◇
 That this whole frame doth euen labour so
 Her ruine vnto frailty to declare :
 And trauailes to fore-signifie the wo
 That weake improvidence could not beware.
 " For heauen and earth, and ayre and seas and all,
 " Taught men to see, but not to shun their fall.

117

Is man so deare vnto the heauens, that they
 Respect the wayes of earth, the workes of sinne ?
 Doth this great All, this *Vniuersall*, weigh
 The vaine designes that weakenesse doth begin ?
 Or doth our *fearc*, father of zeale, giue way
 Vnto this errorr ignorance liues in ?

St. 116, l. 2, 'Disordered mortality'. St. 117, l. 5, 'doe'.
 After st. 117 (= 121) in ³(1601, 1602) comes the following :—

122.

'Or do the conscience of our wicked deedes
 Apply to finne the terror of these fightes,
 Hapning at the instant when commotion breedes,
 Amazing only timorous vulgar wights ;

¶ And deeme our faults the cause that moue these powres,
That haue their cause from other cause then ours ?

118

But, these beginnings had this impious Warre,
Th'vngodly blood-shed that did so defile
The beautie of thy fields, and euen did marre
✓ The flowre of thy chiese pride, thou fairest Ile :
These were the causes that incent so farre
The ciuill wounding hand inrag'd with spoyle ;
That now the liuing, with afflicted eye,
Looke backe with griefe on such calamitie.

Who euer aggrauating that which feedes
Their feares, still finde out matter that affrightes
Whilst th'impious fierce, neglecting feele no touch,
And waigh too light what others feare so much.'

Following st. 117 is the following :—

' Ah no, th'eternall powre that guides this frame
And serues him with the instruments of heauen,
To call the earth and summon vp our shame,
By an edict from euerlasting giuen ;
Forbids mortality to search the fame ;
Where fence is blind, and wit of act bereauen,
Terror must be our knowledge, feare our skill,
T'admire his worke and tremble at his will.'

(In 3 l. 1, 'No, no.') .

St. 118, l. 1, 'And '1, 2.

The end of the first Booke.



THE SECOND BOOKE.

THE ARGVMENT.

King Richard mones his wrong, and wails his raigne :
And here betrayd, to London he is led,
Basely atty'd, attending Herfords traine :
Where th'one is scorn'd, the other I'Welcomed.
His Wife, mistaking him, doth much complaine ;
And both togither greatly sorrowed :
In hope to saue his life and ease his thrall,
He yeelds vp state, and Rule, and Crowne, and all.



I
N dearth of faith, and scarcitie of
friendes,
The late great mighty Monarch, on
the shore
In th'vtmost corner of his Land,
attendes
To call backe false obedience, fled
before ;

Toyles, and in vaine his toyle, and labour spendes :
More harts he sought to gaine, he lost the more :

¹ 'The Argvment of the Second Booke'.
St. 1, l. 5,, removed after , and ' and 'vaine.'

All turn'd their faces to the rising funne,
And leauie his setting-fortune, night begunne.

2

Percy,¹ how soone, by thy example led,
The household traine forsooke their wretched Lord !
When, with thy staffe of charge dishonoured,
Thou brak'st thy fayth, not steward of thy word,
And tookst his part that after tooke thy head ;
When thine owne hand had strengthned first his sword.
“ For, such great merits do vpbraid, and call
“ For great reward, or thinke the great too smal.

3

And Kings loue not to be beholding ought :
Which makes their chiefest friends oft speed the worst.
For, those, by whom their fortunes haue bin wrought,
Put them in minde of what they were at first.
Whose doubtfull faith if once in question brought,
Tis thought they will offend because they durst :
And taken in a fault are neuer spar'd ;
“ Being easier to reuenge, then to reward.

4

And thus these mightie actors, sonnes of change,
These partizanes of factions, often tri'd ;
That, in the smoake of Innouations strange,
Builde huge vncertaine plots of vnsure pride :
And, on the hazard of a bad exchange,
Haue ventur'd all the stocke of life beside ;
“ Whilst Princes, raif'd, disdaine to haue bin raif'd
“ By those whose helpes deserue not to be praiſ'd.

¹ This Percie was Earle of Worster, brother to the Earle of Northumberland, and steward of the Kings house.

St. 2, l. 2, ‘O’ !.

5

✓ But thus is *Richard* left, and all alone
 Saue with th'vnarmed title of his right ;
 And those braue troupes, his fortune-followers gone,
 And all that pompe (the complements of might)
 Th'amuzing shadowes that are cast vpon
 The state of Princes, to beguile the sight,
 All vanisht cleane, and only frailty left ;
 Himfelfe, of all, besides himselfe, bereft :

6

Like when some great *Colofus*, whose strong base
 Or mightie props are shrunk or funke away,
 Fore-shewing ruine, threatning all the place
 That in the danger of his fall doth stay,
 All straight to better safetie flocke apace ;
 None rest to helpe the ruine, while they may.
 " The perill great, and doubtfull the redresse,
 " Men are content to leauue Right in distresse.

7

And looke, how *Thames*, inricht with many a Flood,
 And goodly Riuers (that haue made their Graues,
 And buried both their names and all their good
 Within his greatnes, to augment his waues)
 Glides on, with pompe of Waters, vnwithstood,
 Vnto the *Ocean* (which his tribute craues)
 And layes vp all his wealth, within that powre,
 Which in it selfe all greatnes doth deuowre :

St. 5, l. 1, 'O Maiestie left naked' ; 'Now . . . forsaken' : l. 2,
 'But . . . thy' , : l. 3, 'Those gallant . . . thy' ; 'Saust . . .
 thy' : l. 6, 'cares' , : l. 7, 'Are' : l. 8, 'Thy selfe' (*bis*) .
 St. 7, l. 1, 'As stately Thames' , .

8

So flocke the mighty, with their following traine,
 Vnto the all-receiuing *Bullingbrooke*¹ :
 Who wonders at himselfe, how hee should gaine
 So many harts as now his partie tooke ;
 And with what ease, and with how slender paine,
 His fortune giues him more then he could looke :
 What he imagind neuer could be wrought
 Is powrd vpon him, farre beyond his thought.

9

So, often, things which seeme at first in shewe,
 Without the compasse of accomplishment,
 Once vent'red on, to that successe do growe,
 That euen the Authors do admire th'euent ;
 So many meanes which they did neuer knowe
 Do second their designes, and do present
 Straunge vnexpected helps, and chiefly then
 When th'Actors are reputed worthy men.

10

And *Richard*, who lookt Fortune in the backe,
 Sees headlong-lightnes running from the right,
 Amazed standes to note how great a wracke
 Of faith, his riots cauf'd, what mortall spight
 They beare him, who did law and iustice lacke ;
 Sees how concailed hate breakes out in fight,
 And feare-depressed enuie (pent before)
 When fit occasion thus vnlockt the dore.

¹ The D. of Yorke, left Gouernour of the Realm in the absence of the king, hauing leuied a great Army, as if to haue opposed against Bullingbrooke, brought most of the Nobilitie of the kingdome to take his part.

I I

Like when some mastiue whelpe, dispos'd to play,
 A whole confus'd heard of beastes doth chace,
 Which with one vile consent run all away ;
 If any hardier then the rest in place
 But offer head, that idle feare to stay,
 Backe straight the daunted chaser turnes his face,
 And all the rest (with bold example led)
 As fast run on him, as before they fled :

I 2

So, with this bold opposer, rushes-on
 This many-headed monster, *Multitude* :
 And he, who late was feard, is set vpon,
 And by his owne (*Aetæon-like*) pursu'd ;
 His owne, that had all loue and awe forgone :
 Whom breath and shadowes onely did delude,
 And newer hopes, which promises perswade ;
 Though rarely men keepe promises so made.

I 3

Which when he faw ; thus to himselfe complaines :
 " O why do you, fond, false-deceiued, so
 " Run headlong to that change that nothing gaines,
 " But gaine of forrow, onely change of wo ?
 " Which is all one, if he be like who raignes :
 " Why will you buy, with blood, what you forgoe ?
 " Tis nought, but shewes, that Ignorance esteemes :
 " The thing possest is not the thing it seemes.

St. 12, l. 8, 'rare performed' : ¹ as our text.

St. 13, l. 1, 'feeing this' : ².

14

" And when the sinnes of *Bullingbrooke* shall be
 " As great as mine, and you vnanswered
 " In these your hopes ; then may you wish for me
 " Your lawfull Sov'raigne, from whose faith you fled ;
 " And, grieved in your soules, the error see
 " That shining promises had shadowed :
 " As th'humorous sicke, remouing, finde no ease,
 " When changed Chambers change not the diseafe.

15

" Then shall you finde this name of Libertie
 ▷ " (The watch-word of Rebellion euer vf'd ;
 " The idle echo of Vncertaintie,
 " That euermore the simple hath abus'd)
 " But new-turnd Seruitude and Miserie ;
 " And euen the same and worse, before refus'd.
 " Th'aspirer once attaind vnto the top,
 " Cuts off thoſe meanes by which himſelfe got vp.

16

" And with a harder hand, and streighter raine,
 " Doth curbe that loofenes he did finde before ;
 " Doubting th'occasion like might serue againe,
 " His owne example makes him feare the more.
 " Then, ô iniurious Land, what dost thou gaine
 " To aggrauate thine owne afflictions store ?
 " Since thou must needs obey Kings gouernement ;
 " And no rule, euer yet, could all content.

17

" What if my youth hath offered vp to lust
 " Licentious fruites of indiscreet desires,
 " When idle heate of vainer yeeres did thrust
 " That furie on : yet now when it retires
 " To calmer state, why shoulde you so distrust
 " To reape that good whereto mine age aspires ?
 " The youth of Princes haue no boundes for finne,
 " Vnlesse themfelues do make them boundes within.

18

" Who lees not, that fees ought (wo worth the while)
 " The easie way, that Greatnesse hath to fall ?
 " Enuirond with deceit, hemm'd-in with guile,
 " Sooth'd vp in flatterie, fawnd on of all :
 " Within his owne, liuing as in exile ;
 " Heares but with others eares, or not at all :
 " And euen is made a prey vnto a fewe,
 " Who locke vp grace that would to other shewe :

19

" And who (as let in lease) do farme the Crowne,
 " And ioy the vse of Maiestie and might ;
 " Whil'st we hold but the shadow of our owne,
 " Pleas'd with vaine shewes, and dallied with delight :
 " They, as huge vnproportion'd mountaines, growne
 " Betweene our land and vs, shadowing our light,
 " Bereaue the rest of ioy, and vs of loue,
 " And keepe downe all, to keepe themſclues aboue.

St. 17, 'O' !.

St. 18, l. 7, 'Euen made' !.

20

" Which wounds, with griefe, poore vnrefpected zeale,
 " When grace holdes no proportion in the parts ;
 " When distribution, in the Common-weale,
 " Of charge and honour due to good desarts
 ▷ " Is stopt ; when others greedie hands must deale
 " The benefite that Maiestie imparts :
 " What good we meant, comes gleaned home but light,
 " Whilſt we are rob'd of prayſe, they of their right.

21

Thus he complained ; when, lo, from *Lancaster*
 (The new intit'led Duke) with order fent
 Arriv'd *Northumberland*,¹ as to conferre
 And make relation of the Dukes intent :
 And offred there, if that he would referrer
 The controuersie vnto Parlement,
 And punish thoſe that had abuſ'd the State,
 As cauſers of this vniuerſall hate ;

¹ The E. of Northumberland ſent to the king from Hen. Bullingbrooke now D. of Lancaster.

After st. 20 the following :—

' O hence I fee, and to my griefe I fee,
 Th' vncconcileable diſunion,
 Is growne between an aggriued realme and mee,
 And by their fault, whose faith I trusted on :
 My owne nature, tractable and free,
 Soone drawne to what my counſel would haue done,
 Is thus betraide by them and my neglect,
 Easieſt deceiud where leaſt I did ſuſpect.'

(l. 3, miſprinted 'aggraued' : in ⁸, l. 1, 'Hence, hence.')

22

And also see that Iustice might be had
 On those the Duke of *Glosters* death procur'd,
 And such remov'd from Councell as were bad ;
 His cosin *Henry* would, he there assur'd,
 On humble knees before his Grace be glad
 To aske him pardon, to be well secur'd,
 And haue his right and grace resto'rd againe :
 The which was all he labour'd to obtaine.

23

And therefore doth an enterparle exhort,
 Perswades him leaue that vnbeſeeming place,
 And with a princely hardinesse refort
 Vnto his people, that attend his Grace :
 They meant his publique good, and not his hurt ;
 And would moft ioyfull be to ſee his face :
 He layes his foule to pledge, and takes his Oath,
 The oſt of Christ, an oſtage for his troth.

24

This proffer, with ſuch protestations, made
 Vnto a King that ſo neere danger stood,
 Was a ſufficient motiue to perswade,
 When no way elſe could ſhew a face ſo good :
 Th'vnhonourable meanes of ſafety, bade
 Danger accept, what Maiesty withſtood.
 " When better choyfes are not to be had,
 " We needes muſt take the ſeeming beſt of bad.

St. 23, l. 1, 'he a Parley' ¹: l. 5, 'the' ¹.

25

Yet standes he in doubt, a while, what way to take ;
 Conferring with that small remaining troope
 ▷ Fortune had left ; which neuer would forsake
 Their poore distressed Lord, nor neuer stoope
 To any hopes the stronger part could make.
 Good *Carlile*,¹ *Ferby*, and Sir *Stephen Scroope*,
 With that most worthy *Montague*,¹ were all
 That were content with *Maiesy* to fall.

26

▷ Time spare, and make not sacrilegious theft
 Vpon so memorable constancie :
 Let not succeeding Ages be bereft
 Of such examples of integritie :
 Nor thou magnanimous *Leigh*² must not be left
 In darknesse, for thy rare fidelitie ;
 To saue thy faith, content to lose thy head ;
 That reuerent head, of good men honoured.

27

Nor will my Conscience I shoud iniury
 Thy memorie most trusty *Ienico*,³
 For b'ing not ours ; though wish that *Gafconie*
 Claym'd not, for hers, the faith we reuerence so ;

¹ The Bishop of Carlile. Montague Earle of Salisbury.

² This was sir Peter Leighs Auncif[er]t or Lime in Cheshire that now is.

³ Ienico d'Artois a Gafcoin.

St. 25, l. 2, 'And doth confer' : l. 3, 'That fortune' .

St. 26, l. 1, 'O Time commit' : l. 2, 'Vppon the holy faith of these
 good men' : l. 4, '... worthy of our Pen' : l. 5, 'shalt' : l. 6,
 'constant honor then' : l. 7, 'That thou to . . . wouldest' : l. 8, '...
 that all men pittied' .

St. 27, l. 1, 'Nor Conscience woulde that I' : l. 2, 'O Ienico thy
 memory so deere' : l. 4, '... we hold so deere' :

That *England* might haue this small companie
Onely to her alone, hauing no moe :
But let's diuide this good betwixt vs both,
Take she thy birth, and we will haue thy troth.

28

“ Graue *Montague*, whom long experience taught
“ In either fortune, thus aduif'd his King :¹
“ *Deare Sou'raigne* know, the matter that is fought,
“ Is onely now your Maiesty to bring
“ (From out of this poore safetie you haue got)
“ Into theyr hands, that else hold euery thing :
“ For, now, but onely you they want, of all ;
“ And wanting you, they nothing theirs can call.

29

“ Here haue you craggie Rocks to take your part ;
“ That neuer will betray their faith to you :
“ These trusty Mountaines here will neuer start,
“ But stand t'vpbraid their shame that are vntrue.
“ Here may you fence your safetie with small art,
“ Against the pride of that confusid Crew :
“ If men will not, these verie Clifffes will fight,
“ And be sufficient to defend your right.

30

“ Then keepe you here, and here shall you behold,
“ Within short space, the flyding faith of those
“ That cannot long their resolution hold,
“ Repent the course their idle rashnesse chose :

¹ The Earle of Salsbury his speech to K. Richard.
St. 27, l. 6, ‘ Wholly her owne, and shee no partner heere ’ .
St. 29, l. 4, ‘ obraid ’ .

" For, that same mercenarie faith (they fold)
 " With least occasions discontented growes,
 " And insolent those voluntarie bands ;
 " Presuming how, by them, he chiefly stands.

31

" And how can he those mightie troupes sustaine
 " Long time, where now he is, or any where ?
 " Besides, what discipline can he retaine
 " Whereas he dares not keepe them vnder feare,
 " For feare to haue them to reuolt againe ?
 " So that it selfe when Greatnesse cannot beare,
 " With her owne waight, must needes confus'dly fall,
 " Without the helpe of other force at all.

32

" And hither to approche hee will not dare ;
 " Where deserts, rockes, and hilles, no succours giue ;
 " Where desolation, and no comforts are ;
 " Where few can do no good, many not liue.
 " Besides, we haue the *Ocean* to prepare
 " Some other place, if this should not relieu :
 " So shall you tire his force, consume his strength,
 " And weary all his followers, out, at length.

33

" Doe but referre to time, and to small time ;
 " And infinite occasions you shall finde
 " To quaile the Rebell, euen in the prime
 " Of all his hopes, beyond all thought of minde :
 " For, many (with the conscience of the crime)
 " In colder blood will curse what they design'd :

" And bad successe, vpbrayding their ill fact,
 " Drawes them, whom others draw, from such an act.

34

" For, if the least imagin'd ouverture
 " But of conceiv'd reuolt men once espie ;
 " Straight shrinke the weake, the great will not indure,
 " Th' impatient run, the discontented flie :
 " The friend his friends example doth procure,
 " And all togither haste them presently
 " Some to their home, some hide : others, that stay,
 " To reconcile themselues, the rest betray.

35

" What hope haue you, that euer *Bullingbrooke*
 " Will liue a Subiect, that hath tri'd his fate ?
 " Or what good reconcilement can you looke,
 " Where he must alwayes feare, and you must hate ?
 " And neuer thinke that he this quarrell tooke
 " To reobtaine thereby his priuate state.
 " T'was greater hopes, that hereto did him call :
 " And he will thrust for all, or else lose all.

36

" Nor trust this subtle *Agent*, nor his oth.
 " You knowe his faith : you tri'd it before hand.
 " His fault is death : and now to lose his troth,
 " To saue his life, he will not greatly stand.
 " Nor trust your kinsmans proffer ; since you, both
 " Shew, blood in Princes is no stedfast band.
 " What though he hath no title ? he hath might :
 " That makes a title, where there is no right.

St 33, l. 7, 'obraiding' !.

37

L. Thus he : when that good Bishop¹ thus replies,
 Out of a minde that quiet did affect :
 " My Lord, I must confesse, as your case lies,
 " You haue great cause your Subiects to suspect,
 " And counterplot against their subtelties,
 " Who all good care and honestie neglect ;
 " And feare the worst what insolence may do,
 " Or armed fury may incense them to.

38

" But yet, my Lord, feare may aswell transport
 " Your care, beyond the truth of what is meant ;
 " As otherwise neglect may fall too short,
 " In not examin'g of their intent :
 " But, let vs weigh the thing which they exhort.
 " Tis Peace, Submission, and a Parlement :
 " Which, how expedient 'tis for either part,
 " Twere good we iudg'd with an vnpartiall hart.

39

" And first, for you my Lord, in griefe we see
 " The miserable case wherein you stand ;
 " Voyde here of succour, helpe, or maiestie,
 " On this poore promontorie of your Land :
 " And where how long a time your Grace may be
 " (Expecting what may fall into your hand)
 " Wee know not ; since th'euent of things do lie
 " Clof'd vp in darkenes, farre from mortall eye.

¹ The Bishop of Carlile.

40

“ And how vnfit it were, you should protract
“ Long time, in this so dangerous disgrace ?
“ As though that you good spirit and courage lackt
“ To issue out of this opprobrious place :
“ When euen the face of Kings do oft exact
“ Feare and remorse in faultie subiects base ;
“ And longer stay a great presumption drawes
“ That you were guilty, or did doubt your cause.

41

“ What Subiects euer so inrag'd would dare
“ To violate a Prince, t'offend the blood
“ Of that renowned race, by which they are
“ Exalted to the height of all their good ?
“ What if some things by chaunce misguidid were,
“ Which they haue now rebelliously withstood ?
“ They neuer will proceed with that despight
“ To wracke the State, and to confound the right,

42

“ Nor doe I think that *Bullingbrooke* can bee
“ So blind-ambitious, to affect the Crowne ;
“ Hauing himselfe no title, and doth see
“ Others, if you should fayle, must keepe him downe.
“ Besides, the Realme, though mad, will neuer gree
“ To haue a right succeffion ouerthrowne ;
“ To rayfe confusion vpon them and theirs,
“ By preiudicing true and lawfull heires.

43

" And now it may be, fearing the successe
 ' Of his attemptes, or with remorse of minde,
 " Or else distrusting secret practises,
 " He would be glad his quarrell were resign'd ;
 " So that there were some orderly redresse
 " In those disorders which the Realme did finde :
 " And this, I think, he now sees were his best ;
 " Since farther actions further but vnrest.

44

" And, for th'impossibilitie of peace
 " And reconcilement, which my Lord obiects ;
 " I think, when doing iniurie shall cease
 " (The cause pretended) then surcease th'effects :
 " Time and some other Actions may increase
 " As may diuert the thought of these respects ;
 " Others law of forgetting iniuries¹
 " May serue our turne in like calamities.

45

" And for his oath, in conscience, and in sence,
 " True honour would not so be found vntrue,
 " Nor spot his blood with such a foule offence
 " Against his soule, against his God, and you.
 " Our Lord forbid, that ever with th'expence
 " Of heauen and heauenly ioyes, that shall insue,
 " Mortalitie should buy this little breath,
 " T'indure the horror of eternall death.

St. 44, l. 3, spelled 'doying' in original.

¹ *Lex Amnestia.*

46

" And therefore, as I thinke, you safely may ↗
" Accept this proffer ; that determine shall
" All doubtfull courses by a quiet way,
" Needfull for you, fit for them, good for all.
" And here, my Sov'raigne, to make longer stay
" T'attend for what you are vnsure will fall,
" May slippe th'occasion, and incense their will :
" For, Feare, that's wiser then the truth, doth ill.

47

Thus he perswades, out of a zealous minde ;
Supposing, men had spoken as they ment :
And, vnto this, the King likewise inclin'd :
As wholly vnto peace, and quiet bent :
And yeeldes himselfe to th'Earle, goes, leaues-behind
His safetie, Scepter, Honor, Gouernement :
For, gone, all's gone : he is no more his owne ;
And they rid quite of feare, he of the Crowne.

48

A place there is, where proudly rais'd there stands
A huge aspiring Rock, neighb'ring the Skies ;
Whose furly brow imperiously commaunds
The Sea his boundes, that at his proud feete lies :
And spurnes the waues, that in rebellious bands
Assault his Empire, and against him rise :
Vnder whose craggy gouernment, there was
A niggard narrow way for men to passe.

49

And here, in hidden clifffes, concealed lay
 A troope of armed men, to intercept
 The vnsuspecting King, that had no way
 To free his foote, that into danger stept.
 The dreadfull *Ocean*, on the one side, lay :
 The hard-incroching Mountaine th'other kept :
 Before him, he beheld his hateful foes :
 Behind him, trayterous enemies incloſe.

50

Enuiron'd thus, the Earle begins to cheere
 His al-amased Lord, by him betrayde ;
 Bids him take courage, ther's no cause of feare,
 These troopes, but there to guard him safe, were layd.
 To whom the King ; What neede so many here ?
 This is against your oath, my Lord, he said.
 But, now hee fees in what distresse he stood :
 To striue, was vaine ; t'intreat, would do no good.

51

And therefore on with careful hart he goes ;
 ▷ Complaines (but, to himselfe) sighes, grieues, and freats ;
 At *Rutland* dines, though feedes but on his woes :
 The grieve of minde hindred the minde of meats.
 For, sorrow, shame, and feare, scorne of his foes,
 The thought of what he was, and what now threats,
 Then what he shoud, and now what he hath done,
 Musters confused passions all in one.

52

To *Flint*, from thence, vnto a restles bed,
 That miserable night, he comes conuayd ;
 Poorely prouided, poorely followed,
 Vncourted, vnrespected, vnobayd :
 Where, if vncertaine sleepe but hooerend
 Ouer the drooping cares that heauy weigh'd ;
 Millions of figures, fantasie presents
 Vnto that forrow, wakened grieve augments.

53

His new misfortune makes deluding sleepe
 Say 'twas not so (False dreames the trueth denie).
 Wherewith he starts ; feels waking cares do creepe
 Vpon his soule, and giues his dreame the lie ;
 Then sleepes againe : and then againe, as deepe
 Deceites of darknes mocke his miserie.
 So hard believ'd was sorrow in her youth :
 That he thinks truth was dreams, & dreams were truth.

54

The morning light presents vnto his view
 (Walking vpon a turret of the place)
 The trueth of what hee sees is prov'd too true ;
 A hundred thousand men, before his face,
 Came marching on the shore, which thither drew :
 And, more to aggrauate his great disgrace,
 Those he had wronged, or done to them despight,
 (As if they him vpbrayd) came first in sight.

St. 54. l. 8, 'obrayd' !.

55

There might hee see that false forsworne vile crue,
 Those shameless agents of vnlawfull lust,
 His *Pandars, Parasites* (people vntrue
 To God and man, vnworthy any trust)
 Preacing vnto that fortune that was new,
 And with vnblushing faces formost thrust ;
 As those that still with prosperous fortune sort,
 And are as borne for Corte, or made in Cort.

56

There hee beheld, how humbly diligent
 New Adulation was to be at hand ;
 How ready Falsehood stept ; how nimblly went
 Base pick-thank Flattery, and preuents Command :
 Hee saw the great obay, the graue consent,
 And all with this new-ray'd Aspirer stand ;
 But, which was worst, his owne part acted there,
 Not by himselfe ; his powre, not his, appeare.

57

Which whilst he view'd, the Duke he might perceiue
 Make towards the Castle, to an interview.

St. 55, ll. 7, 8—‘ lie in sunshine of delights,
 And fie the winter when affliction lights ’¹.

St. 56, ll. 7, 8—‘ Which when he saw and in his sorrow waid,
 Thus out of grieve vnto himselfe he said ’¹.

St. 57—‘ More grieve had faid : when lo the Duke he saw
 Entering the *Castle*, come to parle there ;
 Which makes him presently from thence withdraw,
 Into a surer place some other where :
 His fortune now inforft his yeelding awe
 To meeke him, who before in humble feare
 Would haue beene glad t'haue staid, and to prepare
 The grace of audience, with attendant care ’¹. So ².

Wherefore he did his contemplation leue,
 And downe into some fitter place withdrew ;
 Where now he must admitte, without his leue,
 Him, who before with all submision due
 Would haue beene glad, t'attend, and to prepare
 The grace of audience, with respectiue care.

58

Who now being come in presence of his king
 (Whether the sight of Maiestie did breed
 Remorse of what he was incompassing,
 Or whether but to formalize his deed)
 He kneeles him downe with some astonishing,
 Rose ; kneeles againe : (for, craft wil still exceed)
 When-as the king approch't, put off his Hood,
 And welcomd him, though wisht him little good.

St. 58, l. 1, 'The Duke when' ¹, ² : l. 3. ' . . . wrong which reuerence
 did bring' ¹ : l. 5, ' . . . euen at his entering' ¹.

St. 58—61 in ¹ :—

58.

O faithlesse *Cof'en*, here behold I stand
 Spectator of that act my selfe haue plaid,
 That act of rule which now vpon thy hand
 This wauering mutability hath laid :
 But *Cof'en*, know the faith of this false land
 Stands sworne to me ; that faith they haue betraid
 Is mine, tis mine the rule ; thou dost me wrong
 T'vsurpe the gouernment I held so long.

59.

And when thou hast but tride what I haue found,
 Thou maist repent t' haue bought cōmand so deare,
 When thou shalt find on what vnquiet ground
 Greatnes doth stand, that stands so high in feare :
 Where infinite occasions do confound
 The peace of minde, the good thou lookst for here :
 O fatall is th'ascent vnto a crowne !
 From whence men come not downe, but must fall downe.

59

" To whom, the Duke began : My Lord, I knowe
 " That both vncall'd, and vnexpected too,
 " I haue presumed in this sort to shewe
 " And seeke the right which I am borne vnto :
 " Yet pardon I beseech you, and allow
 " Of that constraint, which driues me thus to doo.
 " For, since I could not by a fairer course
 " Attaine mine owne, I must vse this of force.

60.

O you that cherish sat iniquity,
 Inriching finne, with store, and vice with gaine,
 By my disgrace, see what you get thereby
 To raise the bad, to make the good complaine :
 Those vipers spoile the wombe wherein they lie,
 And haue but impudence or grace to gaine,
 But bodies and bold browes ; no mindes within,
 But mind of ill, that knowes but how to sin.

61.

And for the good which now do take thy part,
 Thou must reioyce ; for th'others I am glad
 To thinke they may in time likewife subuart
 The expectation which of thee men had :
 When thou shalt find how difficult an art
 It is to rule and please the good and bad :
 And feele the griuance of this fattall sort,
 Which still are borne for court are made in court.
 So ², with trivial variants of spelling, etc.

St. 59, l. 2, 'vnlookt for aid, vnsent vnto' ¹: l. 3, '... come hither
 now' ¹: ll. 4-8—

' But this your wrong and rigor draue me to,
 And being come I purpose now to shew
 You better how to rule, and what to doe :
 You haue had time too much to worke our ill,
 But now redresse or plained in our will ' ¹.

60

" Well : so it seemes, deare Cosin, said the King ;
 " Though you might haue procur'd it otherwise :
 " And I am here content, in euery thing
 " To right you, as your selfe shal best deuise :
 " And God voutsafe, the force that here you bring
 " Beget not *England* greater iniuries.
 And so they part : the Duke made haste from thence :
 It was no place to ende this difference.

61

Straight towards *London*, in this heate of pride,
 They forward set ; as they had fore-decreed :
 With whom, the *Captive King* constraind must ride,
 Most meanely mounted on a simple Steed :
 Degraded of all grace and ease beside,
 Thereby neglect of all respect to breed.
 For, th'ouer-spreading pompe of prouder might
 Must darken vweaknes, and debase his sight.

62

Approaching neere the Cittie, hee was met
 With all the sumptuous shewes ioy could deuise :
 Where new-desire to please did not forget
 To passe the vſuall pompe of former guise.

St. 60, l. 1, 'As you shall please deare cosin'^{1,2} : l. 2, 'You haue me
 in your powre, I am content'¹ : ll. 3, 4—

' And I am pleaseid, if my disgrace may bring
 Good to my countrey which I euer ment'¹ :

ll. 5, 6—' But yet God grant your course held in this thing
 Cause not succeeding ages to repent '¹ :

ll. 7, 8—' And so they left : the Duke had lief to go,
 It was no place to end the matter fo '¹.

St. 61, l. 2, 'The Duke sets forward as they had decreed '¹.

Striuing Applause, as out of prison let,
 Runnes-on, beyond all bounds, to nouelties :
 And voyce, and hands, and knees, and all do now
 A strange deformed forme of welcome shewe.

63

And manifold Confusion running greetes,
 Shoutes, cries, claps hands, thrusts, striues and presses
 Houses impov'risht were, t'inrich the streetes, [neere :
 And streetes left naked, that (vnhappie) were
 Plac't from the sight where Joy with Wonder meetes ;
 Where all, of all degrees, strie to appeare ;
 Where diuers-speaking Zeale one murmure findes,
 In vndistinguisht voyce to tell their mindes.

64

He that in glorie of his fortune fate,
 Admiring what hee thought could neuer be,
 Did feele his blood within salute his state,
 And lift vp his reioycing soule, to see
 So many hands and hearts congratulate
 Th'aduancement of his long-desir'd degree ;
 When, prodigall of thankes, in passing by,
 He refalutes them all, with chearefull eye.

65

Behind him, all aloofe, came pensiue on
 The vnregarded King ; that drooping went
 Alone, and (but for spight) scarce lookt vpon :
 Judge, if hee did more enuie, or lament.

St. 62, l. 5, cap. A substituted for 'a' ; and so in after impersonations.
 St. 63, l. 2, 'Shoothes' !.

See what a wondrous worke this day is done ;
 Which th' image of both fortunes doth present :
 In th'one, to shew the best of glories face ;
 In th'other, worse then worst of all disgrace.

66

Now *Isabell*, the young afflicted Queene
 (Whose yeares had neuer shew'd her but delights,
 Nor louely eyes before had euer seene
 Other then smilling ioyes, and ioyfull sights ;
 Borne great, matcht great, liv'd great, and euer beene
 Partaker of the worlds best benefits)
 Had plac't her selfe, hearing her Lord should passe
 That way, where she vnseene in secret was ;

68

Sicke of delay, and longing to behold
 Her long-mist Loue in fearefull ieoperdies :
 To whom, although it had, in sort, beene told
 Of their proceeding, and of his surprize ;
 Yet thinking they would neuer be so bold
 To lead their Lord in any shamefull wise,
 But rather would conduct him as their King ;
 As seeking but the States reordering.

69

And foorth shee lookest, and notes the formost traine ;
 And grieues to view some there she wisht not there :
 Seeing the chiefe not come, stayes, lookest againe ;
 And yet she sees not him that should appeare :
 Then backe she stands, and then desires as faine
 Againe to looke, to see if hee were neere :

St. 69, l. 5, 'was' (bad).

At length a glittering troupe farre off she spies,
Perceiues the throng, and heares the shouts and cries.

70

Lo, yonder now at length he comes, sayth shee :
 ▷ Looke, my goode women, where he is in sight :
 Do you not see him ? yonder, that is hee,
 Mounted on that white Courier, all in white,
 There where the thronging troupes of people bee ;
 I know him by his feate, he sits f'vpright :
 Lo, now he bowes : deare Lord, with what sweet grace
 How long, haue I longd to behold that face !

71

O what delight my hart takes by mine eye !
 I doubt me, when he comes but someting neere,
 I shall set wide the window : what care I
 Who doth see me, so him I may see cleare ?
 Thus doth false ioy delude her wrongfully
 (Sweete Lady) in the thing she held so deare.
 For, neerer come, she findes she had mistooke ;
 And him she markt, was *Henrie Bullingbrooke*.

72

Then *Ennie* takes the place in her sweet eyes,
 Where Sorrow had prepar'd her selfe afeat :
 And words of wrath, from whence complaints should rife,
 Proceed from egre lookes, and browes that threat :
 Traytor, saith shee ; ist thou, that in this wife
 To braue thy Lord and King, art made so great ?
 And haue mine eyes done vnto me this wrong,
 To looke on thee ? for this, staid I so long ?

St. 71, l. 4, ? accepted from 1. St. 72, l. 4, 'egar' 1.

73

Ah, haue they grac't a perjur'd Rebell so?
 Well ; for their errorr I will weepe them out,
 And hate the tongue defil'd, that prayfde my foe,
 And loath the minde, that gaue me not to doubt :
 What ? haue I added shame vnto my woe ?
 Ile looke no more : Ladies, looke you about,
 And tell me if my Lord be in this traine ;
 Leaft my betraying eyes should erre againe.

74

And in this passion turnes her selfe away :
 The rest looke all, and carefull note each wight ;
 Whil'st she, impatient of the least delay,
 Demaundes againe ; And what, not yet in sight ?
 Where is my Lord ? What, gone some other way ?
 I muse at this. O God, graunt all goe right :
 Then to the window goes againe at last,
 And sees the chieffest traine of all was past ;

75

And sees not him her soule desir'd to see :
 And yet hope, spent, makes her not leauue to looke.
 At last, her loue-quicke eyes, which ready be,
 Fastens on one ; whom though she neuer tooke
 Could be her Lord ; yet that sad cheere which hee
 Then shew'd, his habit and his woful looke,
 The grace he doth in base attire retaine,
 Cauf'd her she could not from his sight refraine.

St. 73, l. 1, 'O' : l. 5, *ibid.*

76

What might he be, she said, that thus alone
 Rides pensiue in this vniersall ioy ?
 Some I perceiue, as well as we, do mone :
 All are not pleaf'd with euery thing this day.
 It may be, hee laments the wrong is done
 Vnto my Lord, and grieues ; as well he may.
 Then he is some of ours : and we, of right,
 Must pittie him, that pitties our sad plight.

77

But stay : ist not my Lord himselfe I see ?
 In truth, if 'twere not for his base aray,
 I verily shoulde thinke that it were hee ;
 And yet his basenes doth a grace bewray :
 Yet God forbid ; let me deceiued be,
 And be it not my Lord, although it may :
 Let my desire make vowes against desire ;
 And let my sight approue my sight a lier.

78

Let me not see him, but himselfe ; a King :
 For so he left me ; fo he did remoue.
 This is not he : this feeles some other thing ;
 A passion of dislike, or else of loue.
 O yes ; 'tis he : that princely face doth bring
 The euidence of Maiestie to prooue :
 That face, I haue conferr'd, which now I see,
 With that within my heart, and they agree.

St. 77, l. 6, 'O' ! : l. 7, 'And let desire' !.

79

Thus as she stood assur'd, and yet in doubt ;
 Wishing to see, what feene she griev'd to see ;
 Hauing beliefe, yet faine would be without ;
 Knowing, yet striuing not to know 'twas hee :
 Her heart relenting, yet her heart so stout
 As would not yeeld to thinke what was, could be :
 Till, quite condemn'd by open prooef of sight,
 Shee must confesse ; or else denie the light.

80

For, whether loue in him did sympathize,
 Or chaunce so wrought, to manifest her doubt ;
 Euen iust before, where she thus secret pries,
 He stayes, and with cleare face lookes all about ;
 When she : Tis, ô, too true ; I know his eyes :
 Alas, it is my owne deare Lord cries out :
 And, with that crie, finks downe vpon the flore :
 Abundant grieve lackt words to vtter more.

81

Sorrow keepes full possession in her heart,
 Lockes it within, stops vp the way of breath,
 Shuts fenses out of doore from euerie part ;
 And so long holdes there, as it hazardeth

St. 80, l. 1, 'whether' of ' ', accepted for 'whither' : l. 3, 'prize' ' '.
 St. 81, l. 1, 'soule' ' ' : l. 2, 'him laies vp the key' ' ':

ll. 3-8—' Raignes all alone a *Lord* without controule
 So long till greater horror threateneth :
 And euen in danger brought, to loose the whole
 H'is forst come forth or else to stay with death ;
 Opens a sigh and lets in fence againe,
 And fence at length giues words leue to complaine.'

Oppressed Nature, and is forc't to part,
 Or else must be constrain'd to stay with death :
 So, by a sigh, it lets in sense againe ;
 And sense, at length, giues words leaue to complaine.

82

Then, like a torrent had beeene stopt before,
 Teares, fighes, and words, doubled togither flowe ;
 Confus'dly striuing whether should do more,
 The true intelligence of grieve to shewe.
 Sighes hindred words : words perisht in their store :
 Both, intermixt in one, together growe.
 One would do all : the other, more then's part ;
 Being both sent equall Agents, from the hart.

83

At length, when past the first of sorrowes worst,
 When calm'd confusion better forme affordes ;
 Her heart commands, her words should passe out first,
 And then her fighes should interpoint her words ;
 The whiles her eyes out into teares should burst :
 This order with her sorrow she accordes ;
 Which, orderless, all forme of order brake :
 So, then began her wordes, and thus she spake ;

84

What ? dost thou thus returne againe to mee ?
 Are these the triumphs, for thy victories ?
 Is this the glorie thou dost bring with thee,
 From that vnhappy Irish enterprise ?

And haue I made so many vowes to see
 Thy safe returne, and see thee in this wife ?
 Is this the lookt-for comfort thou doft bring ?
 To come a Captiue, that wentst out a King ?

85

And yet, deare Lord, though thy vngratefull Land
 Hath left thee thus ; yet I will take thy part :
 I doo remaine the same, vnder thy hand ;
 Thou still doft rule the kingdome of my hart :
 If all be lost, that gouernment doth stand ;
 And that shall neuer from thy rule depart :
 And so thou bee, I care not how thou bee :
 Let Greatnes goe ; so it goe without thee.

86

And welcome come, how-so vnfortunate ;
 I will applaud what others do despise :
 I loue thee for thy selfe, not for thy State : /
 More then thy selfe, is what without thee, lies : /
 Let that more goe, if it be in thy fate :
 And hauing but thy selfe, it will suffize :
 I married was not to thy Crowne, but thee ;
 And thou, without a Crowne, all one to mee.

87

But what do I, heere lurking idlie, mone
 And wayle apart, and in a single part
 Make feuerall grieve ; which should be both in one ;
 The touch being equall of each others hart.
 Ah, no : sweet Lord, thou must not mone alone.
 For, without me, thou art not all thou art ;

St. 84, l. 5, 'O' ! : St. 86, l. 4, , accepted from 'after 'thee.'

Nor my teares, without thine, are fully teares :
For thus vniogn'd, sorrow but halse appeares.

88

Ioyne then our plaints, and make our grieve full grieve :
Our state being one, let vs not part our care.
Sorrow hath onely this poore bare relief,
To be bemon'd of such as wofull are.
And should I rob thy grieve, and be the thiefe
To steale a priuate part, and feuerall share,
Desrawding sorrow of her perfect due ?
No, no, my Lord ; I come to helpe thee rue.

89

Then foorth she goes, a close concealed way
(As grieuing to be seene not as she was) ;
Labors t'attaine his prefence all she may :
Which, with most hard a-do, was brought to passe.
For, that night, vnderstanding where he lay,
With earnest 'treating she procur'd her Passe
To come to him : Rigor could not denie
Those teares, so poore a suite, or put her by.

90

Entring the chamber, where he was alone
(As one whose former fortune was his shame)
Loathing th'vpbrayding eye of any one
That knew him once, and knowes him not the same :
When hauing giuen expresse command that none
Should presse to him ; yet hearing some that came
Turnes angrily about his grieved eyes :
When, lo, his sweete afflicted Queene he spyes.

St. 88, l. 5, 'O' !. St. 90, l. 3, 'obraiding' !.

91

Straight cleares his brow ; and with a borrowed smile,
 What, my deare Queene? welcome, my deare, he sayes :
 And (striuing his owne passion to beguile,
 And hide the sorrow which his eye betrayes)
 Could speake no more ; but wrings her hands, the while :
 And then, Sweet Lady ; and againe he stayes :
 Th'excesse of ioy and sorrow both affordes
 Affliction none, or but poore niggard wordes.

92

Shee that was come with a refolved hart,
 And with a mouth full stor'd, with wordes well chose ;
 Thinking, This comfort wil I first impart
 Vnto my Lord, and thus my speach difpose :
 Then thus Ile fay, thus looke, and with this art
 Hide mine owne sorrow to relieue his woes ;
 When being come, all this prov'd nought but winde ;
 Teares, lookes, and sighes, do only tell her minde.

93

Thus both stood silent and confused so,
 Their eyes relating how their hearts did morne :
 Both bigge with sorrow, and both great with wo
 In labour with what was not to be borne :
 This mightie burthen, wherewithall they goe,
 Dies vndeliuered, perishes vnborne ;
 Sorrow makes silence her best Orator,
 Where words may make it lesse, not shew it morc.

St. 91, l. 2, 'o welcome deare' !.

94

But he, whom longer time had learn'd the art
 T'indure affliction, as a vsuall touch ;
 Straines foorth his wordes, and throwes dismay apart,
 To rayse vp her, whose passions now were such
 As quite opprest her ouercharged hart
 (Too small a vessell to containe so much)
 And cheeres and mones, and fained hopes doth frame,
 As if himselfe beleeu'd, or hop't the same.

95

And now, the while theſe Princes forrowed,
 Forward Ambition (come ſo neere her ende)
 Sleepes not, nor ſlippes th'occasion offered,
 T'accompliſh what it did before intend :
 A Parlement is foorthwith ſummoned
 In *Richards* name ; whereby they might pretend
 A forme, to grace disorder, and a ſhowe
 Of holy right, the right to ouerthrowe.

96

Order, how much predominant art thou !
 That if but onely thou pretended art ;
 How ſoone, deceiv'd mortalitie doth bow
 To follow thine, as ſtill the better part !
 Tis thought, that reuerent Forme will not allow
 Iniquitie, or ſacred right peruart.
 Within our foules, ſince then thou dwell'ſt ſo ſtrong ;
 How ill do they, that vſe thee, to do wrong !

St. 96, ‘o how predominant’ !.

97

So ill did they, that in this formall course
 Sought to establish a deformed right :
 Who might as well effected it by force ;
 But that men hold it wrong, what's wrought by might.
 Offences vrg'd in publique are made worse :
 The shew of iustice aggrauates despight.
 " The multitude, that looke not to the cause,
 " Rest fatisched, so it seeme done by lawes.

98

And now they diuerse articles obiect
 Of rigor, malice, priuate faourings,
 Exaction, riot, falsehood, and neglect ;
 Crimes done, but sildome answered by Kings :
 Which Subiectes doe lament, but not correct.
 And all these faults, which *Lancaster* now brings
 Against a King, must be his owne, when hee,
 By vrging others finnes, a King shall be.

99

For, all that was most odious was deuif'd,
 And publischt in these articles abrode.
 All th'errours of his youth were here comprif'd,
 Calamitie with obloquie to lode :

St. 98, l. 1, 'doth Enuie', ³ : l. 4, 'not to b''': l. 5, 'may complaine'.
 After st. 99 (= 95) in ¹ comes this stanza—

' Ah could not *Maeflie* bee ruined
 But with the fearefull powre of her owne name ?
 And must abusd obedience thus be led
 With powfull titles to consent to shame ?
 Could not Confusion be establisched
 But Forme and Order must confirme the same ?
 Must they who his authority did hate,
 Yet vfe his stile to take away his state ? '

(So ³, with trivial variants of spelling, etc. ; l. 7, 'o thou').

And more to make him publikely despif'd,
 Libels, inuectiues, rayling rimes, were fow'd
 Among the vulgar, to prepare his fall
 With more applaufe and good consent of all.

100

Looke how the day-hater, *Mineruas* bird,¹
 Whil'ft priuiledg'd with darknes and the night,
 Doth liue secure t'himselfe, of others feard ;
 If but by chaunce discouered in the light,
 How doth each little Fowle (with enuie stirr'd)
 Call him to iustice, vrge him with despight ;
 Summon the feathered flockes of all the wood,
 To come to scorne the tyrant of their blood :

101

So fares this King, lay'd open to disgrace,
 Whil'ft euerie mouth full of reproche inuayes ;
 And euerie base detractor, in this case,
 Vpon th'aduantage of misfortune playes :
 Downe-falling Greatnes, vrged on apace,
 Was followed-hard, by all disgracefull wayes ;
 Now in the point t'accelerate an end,
 Whil'ft miserie had no meanes to defend.

102

Vpon those articles in Parlement
 So haynous made, inforc't, and vrg'd so hard,
 He was adiudg'd vnfit for gouernment,
 And of all regal powre and rule debarr'd :
 For, who durst contradict the Dukes intent ?
 Or, if they durst, should patiently be heard ?

¹ The Owle is said to bee Mineruas bird.

St. 100, l. 5, 'O how' 1: l. 6, 'Cals' 1: l. 7, 'Summons' 1

Desire of change, old wrongs, new hopes, fresh feare,
Being far the *maior* part, the cause must beare.

103

Yet must we thinke, that some which saw the course
(The better fewe, whom passion made not blinde)
Stood careful lookers-on, with sad commorse,
Amaz'd to see what headlong rage design'd :
And, in a more considerate discourse
Of tragicall euentes, thereof diuin'd ;
And would excuse and pittie those deseects,
Which, with such hate, the aduerse parte obiects :

104

“ Saying, better yeeres might worke a better care,
“ And time might well haue cur'd what was amisse ;
“ Since all these faults fatall to Greatnes are,
“ And worse deserts haue not beene punish't thus :
“ But yet in this the heauens, we feare, prepare
“ Confusio[n] for our sinnes, aswell as his ;
“ And his calamitie beginneth our :
“ For, he his owne, and we abus'd his powre.

105

Thus murmur'd they ; when to the king were sent
Certaine who might perswade him to forfake
And leaue his Crowne, and with his free consent
A voluntarie Resignation make ;

St. 103, ll. 7, 8—

‘ And did or might these grieved harts to ease
Vtter these sorrowes in like termes as these.’

St. 104, l. 1, ‘Since’¹,² : l. 5, ‘ð’¹.

St. 105, l. 1, ‘grieved’¹,² : l. 2, ‘that might . . . and vrge him on’¹ :
l. 3, ‘To . . . make with’¹ : l. 4, without ‘make’¹.

Since that he could no other way preuent
 These dangers which he else must needes partake :
 For, not to yeeld, to what feare would constraine,
 Would barre the hope of life, that did remaine.

106

And yet this scarce could worke him to consent
 To yeeld vp that so soone, men hold so deare.
 Why, let him take (sayd he) the gouernement,
 And let me yet the name, the title beare :
 Leave me that shewe, and I wil be content ;
 And let them rule and gourne without feare.
 What, can they not my shadow now indure,
 When they of all the rest do stand secure ?

107

Let me hold that, I aske no other good :
 Nay, that I will hold ; *Henrie* do thy worst,
 For, ere I yeeld my Crowne, I'le lose my blood ;
 That blood, that shall make thee and thine accurst.
 Thus resolute a while he firmly stood,
 Till loue of life, and feare of being forc't,
 Vanquisht th'innated valour of his minde ;
 And hope, and friends, so wrought, that he resign'd.

108

Then to the Towre (where he remained) went
 The *Duke*, with all the *Peeres* in company,
 To take his offer with his free consent,
 And this his Resignation testifie ;
 And thereof to informe the Parlement,
 That all things might be done more formally,

St. 105, l. 5, 'Seeing he'': l. 6, 'The daungers of his owne confusio[n]' .

St. 108, l. 2, 'attended on'': l. 4, 'And testifie his resignation' : l. 6,
 'more formally be done' !.

And men thereby rest better fatisfide ;
As of an act not forc't, or falsifide.

109

And forth h'is brought vnto th'accomplishment,
Deckt with the Crowne in princely robes that day ;
Like as the dead, in other Landes are sent
Vnto their Graues, in all their best aray :
And euen like good, did him this ornament.
For, what he brought, he must not beare away ;
But buries there his glory and his name,
Intomb'd both in his owne and others blame.

St. 108, l. 7, 'might rest more fatisfide thereby' : l. 8, 'As not done
of constraint but willingly' .

After st. 108 (= 103) come these two stanzas in' :-

109.

What dissolute proceedings haue we here ?
What strange presumptuous disobedience ?
What vnheard fury void of awe or feare,
With monstrous vnexampled insolence ?
Durst subiects euer here or any where
Thus impiously presume so foule offence ?
To violate the power commanding all
And into iudgement maiestie to call.

110.

O fame conceiue and doe not carry word
To after-comming ages of our shame ;
Blot out of booke and rase out of Record
All monuments memorials of the fame :
Forget to tell how we did lift our sword,
And envious idle accusations frame,
Against our lawfull sou'raigne, when we ought
His end and our release haue staid not sought.

So', with trivial variants of spelling, etc. In st. 110, l. 1, in', 'Fame hide
it close.'

St. 109, l. 8, 'for euermore in' .

I I O

And there vnto th'assembly of these States,
 His forrow for their long indured wrong
 Through his abus'd authority relates,
 Excuses wifh confessions mixt among :
 And glad he sayes, to finish all debates,
 He was to leaue the Rule they fought-for long ;
 Protesting, if it might be for their good,
 He would as gladly sacrifice his blood.

I I I

There, he his Subiectes all (in generall)
 Affoyles and quites of oath and fealtie,
 Renounces interest, title, right and all
 That appertained to kingly dignitie ;
 Subscribes thereto, and doth to witnesse call
 Both heauen and earth, and God, & Saints on hie,
 To testifie his act, and doth professe
 To do the same with most free willingnesse.

I I 2

Tis said, with his owne hands he gaue the Crowne
 To *Lancaster*, and wisht to God he might
 Haue better ioy thereof then he had knowne,
 And that his power might make it his by right :
 And furthermore he crav'd, of all his owne,
 But life, to liue apart a priuate wight ;
 The vanity of Greatnes he had tri'd,
 And how vnsurely standes the foote of pride.

St. 111, ll. 7, 8—

‘ And all this did he but t' haue leaue to liue,
 The which was all he crav'd that they would giue ’ 1.

St. 112, l. 1, ‘ Tis ’ in 1, *, and ‘ This ’ in text is among errata.

113

This brought to passe, the Lords returne with speed,
The Parlement hereof to certifie ;
Where, they at large publisht the Kings owne deed,
And forme of his resignement verbally :
And thereupon doth *Lancaster* proceede
To make his claime vnto the Monarchie ;
And shewes the right he hath, both by descent,
And by recouerie, to the gouernement.

114

Which being granted, *Canterburie* rose
And animates them, by the sacred word,
“ In this their course : and by his Text,¹ he showes
“ How well they made their choyce of such a Lord ;
“ Who, as a man was able to dispose
“ And guide the State : and how the royll fworde
“ Ought to be at a mans commandement ;
“ Not at a childe, or one as impotent.

¹ The Archbishop of Cant. takes his text out of the first booke of the Kings, cap. 9. *Vir dominabitur in populo.*

St. 113, l. 2, ‘T’acquaint the Parliament with what is done’¹: l. 4,
‘And manner of his resignation’¹: ll. 5-8—

‘ When *Canterbury* vrgd them to proceed
Forthwith vnto a new election,
And *Henry* make his claime both by discent
And resignation, to the gouernement’¹.

St. 114-15 not in ¹.

After st. 113 (= 120) comes this in ¹, ² :—

121.

‘ Who there with full and generall applause
Is straight proclaimid as king and after crownd,
The other cleane reiectid by the lawes,
As one the Realme had most vnworthy found.
And yet b *Lancaster* I would thy caufe
Had had as lawfull and as fure ground,

115

" Since, when the greatnes of his charge exceeds
 " The smallnesse of his powers, he must collate
 " The same on others : whence, fayes he, proceedes
 " This rauenous expilation of the State ;
 " Whence no man any more the publike heedes,
 " Then so much as imports his priuate state.
 " *Our Health is from our head* : if that be ill,
 " Distemp'red, saint, and weake, all the rest will.

As how thy vertues, and thy glorious worth,
 For *Empire* borne, for *Gouvernement* brought forth.

122.

Then had not þ that sad succeeding age,
 Her fieldes engrain'd with bloud, her riuers dide
 With purple streaming wounds of her owne rage,
 Nor seene her Princes slaine, her Peeres distroide :
 Then hadst not thou deare country come to wage
 Warre with thy selfe, nor those afflictions tride
 Of all-consuming discord here so long,
 Too mighty now, against thy selfe too strong.

123.

So had the bloud of thirteene battells fought
 About this quarrell, fatall to our land,
 Haue beene referu'd with glory to haue brought
 Nations and kingdomes vnder our commaund :
 So shold all that thy sonne and thou had got,
 With glorious praise haue still beene in our hand,
 And that great worthy, last of all thy name,
 Had ioined the westerne *Empire* to the same.

124.

So shold his great imperiall daughter now
 Th'admired glory of the earth, hereby
 Haue had all this nere bordring world to bow
 To her immortalized maiestie :
 Then proud *Iberus* Lord, not seeking how
 T'attaine a false-conceiued Monarchie,

116

" Then to the present, all his speach he drawes,
 " And shewes what admirable parts abound
 " In this braue Prince ; being fit to giue them lawes,
 " Fit for his valour, fit for iudgement found.
 And *Lancaster*, indeed I would thy cause
 Had had as lawfull and as sure a ground,
 As had thy vertues, and thy noble hart,
 Ordaind, and borne for an Imperial part.

Had kept his barraine boundes and not haue stood
 In vain attempts t'inrich the feas with bloud.

125.

Nor interposed his greedy medling hands
 In other mens affaires t'aduance his owne,
 Nor tyrannid ouer so manie landes
 From late obfcurite so mighty growne :
 But we with our vndaunted conquering bandes
 Had lent our Ensignes vnto landes vnknowne,
 And now with more audacious force began
 To march against th'earths-terror *Ottoman*.

126.

Where thou (*O worthy Essex*) whose deare bloud
 Reforu'd from these sad times to honour ours,
 Shouldſt haue conducted Armies and now stood
 Against the strength of all the *Eaſterne Fowres* :
 There ſhould thy valiant hand perform'd that good
 Against the barbarisme that all deouures,
 That all the ſtates of the redeemeed *Earth*
 Might thee admire, and gloriſte thy birth.

127.

Thence might thy valor haue brought in despight
 Eternall *Tropheis* to *Elizas* name,
 And laid downe at her ſacred feete the right
 Of all thy deedes, and glory of the fame.
 All that which by her powre, and by thy might
 Thou hadſt attaind, to her immortal fame,

117

Then had not that confus'd succeeding Age
 Our fieldes ingrayn'd with bloud, our riuers dy'd
 With purple-streaming woundes of our owne rage,
 Nor seene our Princes slauhtred, Peeres destroyd.

Had made thee wondred here, admird afarre,
 The *Mercury* of peace, the *Mars* of warre.

128.

And then my Lord the glorie of my muse
 Pure-spirited *Mountioy*, th'ornament of men,
 Hadst had a large and mighty field to vse
 Thy holie giftes and learned counsels then :
 Whole landes and Prouinces shold not excuse
 Thy trusty faith, nor yet sufficient beene
 For those great vertues to haue ordered
 And in a calme obedience gouerned.

129.

Nor had I then at solitary brooke
 Sate framing bloody accents of these times,
 Nor told of woundes that grieued eies might looke
 Vpon the horror of their fathers crimes,
 But rather a more glorious subiect tooke
 To register in euerlasting rimes
 The sacred glories of ELIZABETH,
 Thaue kept the wonder of her worth from death.

130.

And likewise builded for your great designes
 O you two worthies, bewties of our state,
 Immortal tombes of vncoufuming lines,
 To keepe your holie deedes intirolat :
 You on whose actions yet the image shines
 Of ancient honor neere worne out of date ;
 You that haue vertue into fashion brought,
 In these neglected times respected nought.

131.

But whither am I carried with the thought
 Of what might haue beene, had not this beene so ?
 O sacred *Fury* how was I thus brought
 To speake of glory that must tell of wo ?

Then hadst not thou, deare Countrie, com'n to vvage
Warre vwith thy selfe, nor those afflictions try'd
Of all consuming discorde here so long ;
Too mightie novv, against thy selfe too strong.

Those acted mischieves cannot be vnwrought,
Though men be plead to wish it were not so ;
And therefore leave sad *Muse* th'imagin'd good,
For we must now returne againe to bloud.

So too in ²—except st. 126-7, 130—with trivial variants in spelling, etc.
In st. 122, l. 1, ‘Then had not that confuz'd succeding age’ : st. 123, l. 1,
‘Wherby’ : st. 124, l. 1, ‘So should’ : st. 129, ll. 5-6, ‘. . . . so sad a
subiect tooke, Composing.’

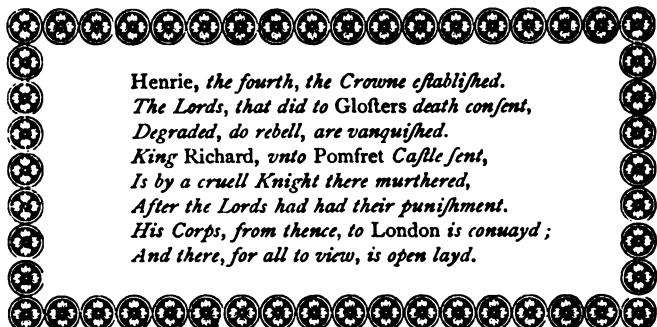
In st. 121, ll. 5-8 are nearly as in 116 of text.

St. 117 = 122 of ¹.

The ende of the second Booke.



THE ARGVMENT OF THE THIRD BOOKE.



I



Ow risen is that Head, by which did
spring
The birth of two strong Heads, two
Crownes, two rights ;
That monstrous shape, that afterward
did bring
Deform'd confusion to distracted wights.

Argu^t, ll. 5, 6—‘ Is murthred there. The Percies making head
Against the king, receiue . . . ’¹ :

ll. 7, 8—‘ And in the end a tedious troublous raigne,
A grieuous death concludes with care and paine ’¹.

Now is attain'd that dearely purchast thing
 That fill'd the world with lamentable sights :
 And now, attain'd, all care is how to frame
 Meanes to establish, and to hold the same.

2

First, he attends to build a strong conceipt
 Of his vsurped powre, in peoples mindes ;
 And armes his cause with furniture of weight :
 Which easilly the sword, and Greatnesse findes.
 Succession, Conquest, and election straight
 Suggessted are, and prov'd in all their kindes.
 More then ynough they finde, who finde their might
 Hath force to make all, that they will haue, Right.

3

Though one of these might verie well suffice
 His present approbation to procure.
 " But who his own cause makes, doth stil deuise
 " To make too much, to haue it more then sure.
 " Feare casts too deepe, and euer is too wise :
 " No vnuall plots, the doubtful can secure.
 And all these disagreeing Claymes he had,
 With hope to make one good of many bad.

St. 2, l. 1, 'Striuing at first' ^{1, 2} : l. 2, 'weake cause in oft-abused' ^{1, 2} :
 ll. 3, 4—'He deckes his deed with colours of deceit
 And ornaments of right, which now he . . . ' ^{1, 2} :
 l. 7, 'findes his' ¹.
 St. 3, l. 1, 'All these he hath when one good would' ^{1, 2} : l. 2, 'The
 worlds applaufe and liking' ^{1, 2} : l. 6, 'The doubtful can no vnuall plots
 endure' ^{1, 2} : ll. 7, 8—
 'These felse-accusing titles all he had,
 Seeking to make one good . . . ' ¹.

4

Like vnto him that fears, and faine would stop
 An inundation working-on apace,
 Runs to the Breach, heapes mightie matter vp,
 Throwes indigested burthens on the place,
 Lodes with huge weights, the out-side, & the top,
 But leaues the inner partes in feeble case ;
 Whil'st th'vnder-searching water, working-on,
 Beares (proudly) downe, all that was idly don :

5

So fares it with our indirect desseignes,
 And wrong contriued labors, at the last ;
 Whil'st working Time, and iustice vndermines
 The feeble frame, held to be wrought so fast :
 Then when out-breaking vengeance vncombines
 The ill-ioyn'd plots so fayrely ouer-cast ;
 Turnes vp those huge pretended heapes of showes,
 And all these weake illusions ouer-throwes.

St. 4, l. 1, 'Like foolish he' : ll. 7, 8—

'Thinking for that the outward forme seemes strong
 Tis sure inough, and may continue long'.

Then follows this additional stanza 5 :—

5.

But when the vnderworking waues come on
 Searching the secrets of vnfenced waies,
 The full maine *Ocean* following hard vpon,
 Beares downe that idle frame, skorning fuch staines,
 Prostrates that frustrate paines as if not done,
 And proudly on his silly labors plaies ;
 Whilst he perceiues his error, and doth finde,
 His ill proceeding contrary to kind. (So .)

St. 5, l. 4, 'ground-worke craft thought laid'.

6

But, after, hauing made his title plaine,
 Vnto his Coronation he proceedes :
 Which, in most sumptuous sort (to intertaine
 The gazing vulgar, whom this splendor feeds)
 Is stately furnishit, with a glorious traine :
 Wherein, the former Kings he far exceeds ;
 And all t'amuse the world, and turne the thought
 Of what & how 'twas done, to what is wrought.

7

And that he might on many props repose,
 He strengths his owne, & who his part did take :
 New Officers, new Councillors he chose :
 His eldest sonne, the Prince of *Wales* doth make ;
 His second, Lord high Steward : and, to those
 Had hazarded their fortunes for his sake,
 He giues them charge, as merites their deseart ;
 And rayfes them, by crushing th'aduerse part.

8

So that hereby, the vniuersall face
 Of Court, with all the Offices of State
 Are wholly chang'd, by death, or by disgrace,
 Vpon th'aduantage of the peoples hate ;

St. 6, l. 1, 'wel he thought his powre made al secur' ^{1, 2}: l. 2, 'And
 not t'his' ¹: l. 5, 'furnisht with a stately-glorious' ¹.

St. 7, l. 8 'Seeking all meanes t'oppreffe' ¹.

St. 8, ll. 1-4—' All Counsellors vnto the former king,
 All th'officers, and iudges of the State,
 He to disgrace, or els to death did bring
 Lead by his owne, or by . . . ' ^{1, 2}:

" Who, euer enuying those of chiefeſt place
 " (Whom neither worth nor vertue, but their fate
 " Exalted hath) doo, when their Kings doo naught
 " (Because it's in their powre) iudge it their faute.

9

And in their ſteed, ſuch as were popular,
 And wel-deſeruing, were aduanct by grace.
 Graue *Shirley*, he ordaines Lord Chancelor ;
 Both worthy for his vertues, and his race :
 And *Norburie* hee appoints for Treasurer ;
 A man, though meane, yet fit to vfe that place :
 And others, t'other roomes ; whom people hold
 So much more lov'd, how much they loath the old.

10

And it behoues him now to doo his beſt
 T'approue his vow, and oath made to the State :
 And many great disorders he redrefst ;
 Which alwayes Vſurpation makes the gate
 To let it felfe into the peoples breſt,
 And ſeekeſ the publike beſt t'accommode :
 Wherein, Iniuſtice better doth then Right :
 " For, who reproves the lame, muſt go vpright.

St. 8, ll. 5, 6—"Who euer more by nature malicing
 Their might whom not their vertues but their fate":

l. 7, ". . . who when kings do what's": l. 8, "tis . . . tis thought their
 faut".

St. 9, l. 1, "plac'd for thoſe", and ſo onward : l. 2, "Belou'd of him,
 and in the peoples": l. 3, "Learned graue *Shirley* he makes *Chauncellor*":
 l. 4, "One of great ſpirit, worthy his worthy race": l. 5, "Clifford he
 ordaines Lord": l. 6, "whofe vertues well-deſeru'd": l. 7, "Others to
 other".

St. 10 and 11 not in ".

I I

Though it be easie to accuse a State,
 Of imperfection and misgouernment :
 And easie to beget in people hate
 Of present Rule, which cannot all content ;
 And fewe attempt it, that effect it not :
 Yet, t'introduce a better gouernment
 In steed thereof, if we t'example looke,
 The vnder-takers haue beene ouer-tooke.

I 2

Then, against those he strictly doth proceed,
 Who chiefe of *Glosters* death were guiltie thought ;¹
 Not so much for the hatred of that deed :
 But, vnder this pretext, the meanes he sought
 To ruine such whose might did much exceed
 His powre to wrong, nor else could well be wrought.
 Law, Iustice, blood, the zeale vnto the dead,
 Were on his side, and his drift coloured.

I 3

Here, many of the greatest of the Land
 Accus'd were of the act,² strong proofes brought out ;
 Which strongly were refell'd : the Lords all stand,
 To cleare their Cause, most resolutely stout :
 The King, perceiving what he tooke in hand
 Was not with safety to be brought-about,
 Desists to vrge their death, in any wife ;
 Respecting number, strength, friends, and allies.

¹ The Nobilitie accused for the death of Thomas of Woodstocke D. of Gloster.

² The Dukes of Surry, Excester, and Aumarle, The Earles of Salisburie, and Gloster, the Bishop of Carlile, Sir Thomas Blunt, and other, were the parties accused for the death of the D. of Gloster.

St. 12, l. 8, 'shadowed'.

I4

Nor was it time now, in his tender raigne,
 And infant-young-beginning gouernement,
 To striue, with blood ; when lenitie must gaine
 The mightie men, and please the discontent.
 " New Kings do feare ; when old Courts farther straine :
 Establisht States to all things will consent.
 He must dispense with his will, and their crime,
 And seeke t'opprese and weare them out with time.

I5

Yet not to seeme, but to haue something done,
 In what he could, not as he would effect ;
 To satisfie the people (that begun,
 Reuenge of wrong and iustice to expect)
 He cauf'd be put to execution, one,
 Who to performe this murther was elect ;
 A base companion, few, or none would misse :
 Who first did serue their turne ; and now serues his.

I6

And, to abase the too high state of thosē
 That were accuf'd, and lessen their degrees,
 Aumarle, Surry, Exceter, must lose
 The names of Dukes ; their titles, dignities,
 ✓ And whatsoeuer honour with it goes ;
 The Earles, their titles and their Signories :
 And all they got in th'end of Richards raigne,
 Since Glosfers death, they must restore againe ;

St. 15, l. 5, 'one' transferred to commencement of l. 6 in ¹: l. 6, 'One that to do' ¹: l. 7, 'mean man whom' ¹.

St. 16, l. 5, 'honour with it goes' ¹, ², accepted for 'profits thereby rise' of our text.

17

By this, as if by *Obracisme*, t'abate
 That great presumptiue wealth, whereon they stand.
 For, first, hereby impov'rishing their state,
 He killes the meanes they might have to withstand :
 Then equals them with other whom they hate
 Who (by their spoyles) are rais'd to hie command ;
 That weake, and enued, if they should conspire,
 They wracke themselues, and he hath his desire.

18

Yet, by this grace (which must be held a grace)
 As both they, and the world, are made beleue,
 He thinks t'haue dealt benignly in this case,
 And left them stafe ynough, to let them liue ;
 And that the taking, from thē, meanes & place,
 Was nothing, in respect what hee did giue :
 But they, that knowe how their owne reckning goes,
 Account not what they haue, but what they lose.

19

The Parlement, which now is held, decreed
 What-euer pleaf'd the King but to propound ;
 Confirm'd the Crowne, to him, and to his feed,
 And by their oath their due obedience bound :

St. 18, l. 1, 'And' ¹ : ll. 3-8—

' He doth himselfe secure and them deface,
 Thinking not rigor that which life doth giue ;
 But what an error was it in this case
 To wrong so many, and to let them liue ?
 But errors are no errors but by fate,
 For oft th'euent make[s] faults fortunate.'

Which was the powre that stood him best in steed,
 And made what-euer broken courses sound.
 For, what he got by fortune, fauour, might,
 It was the State that now must make his right.

20

Here was agreed, to make all more fecure,
 That *Richard* should remaine, for euermore,
 Close-prifoner ; least the Realme might chaunce indure
 Some new reuolt, or any fresh vp-rore :
 And, that if any shoulde such broyle procure,
 By him, or for him, he shoulde die therefore.
 So that a talke of tumult, and a breath,
 Would serue him as his passing bell to death.

21

Yet, reuerent *Carlile*, thou didſt there oppose
 Thy holy voyce, to faue thy Princes blood ;
 And freely checktſt this iudgement, and his foes :
 When all were bad, yet thou dar'dſt to be good.
 Be it inrold (that time may neuer loſe
 The memorie) how firme thy courage stood ;
 When powre, disgrace, nor death, could ought diuert
 Thy glorious tongue, thus, to reueale thy heart.

22

" Graue, reuerent Lords, ſince that this ſacred place
 " Our *Auentine-Retire*, our holy hill
 " (This place, ſoule of our State, the Realmes best grace)
 " Doth priuiledge me ſpeake what reaſon will :

St. 19, ll. 5-8—

' And o b' it finne t'examine now this deed,
 How iuft tis done and on how ſure a ground ?
 Whether that Court maie change due courſe or no,
 Or ought the realme againſt the realme can do ? ' !

" Let me but say my conscience in this case ;
 " Least sinne of silence shew my hart was ill :
 " And let these walles witnesse, if you will not,
 " I do discharge my soule, of this foule blot.

23

" Neuer shall this poore breath of mine consent,
 " That he that two and twentie yeeres hath raignd
 " As lawfull Lord, and King by iust descent,
 " Should here be iudg'd, vnheard, and vnarraignd ;
 " By Subiects too (Judges incompetent
 " To iudge their King vnlawfully detaind)
 " And vnbrought-foorth to plead his guiltless Caufe ;
 " Barring th'Annoynted, libertie of lawes.

24

" Haue you not done inough, with what is done ?
 " Must needes disorder growe, from bad, to worse ?
 " Can neuer mischiefe end as it begunne,
 " But being once out, must farther out, of force ?
 " Thinke you, that any meanes, vnder the Sunne,
 " Can affecure so indirect a course ?
 " Or any broken cunning build so strong,
 " As can hold out the hand of vengeance long ?

St. 23, l. 5, 'two'.

St. 24, in ¹, as follows :—

' Haue you not done inough ? blush, blush to thinke,
 Lay on your harts thofe hands ; thofe hands too rash ;
 Know that this staine that's made doth further sinke
 Into your foulles then all your blouds can wash ;
 Leave with the mischiefe done and doe not linke
 Sin vnto sin, for heauen and earth will dafh
 This ill accomplifht worke ere it be long ;
 For weake he builds that fences wrong with wrong.'

St. 24, in ² as 1609 and our text.

25

Stop, there, was his too vehement speech with speed,
 And he sent close to warde, from where he stood ;
 His zeale vntimely, deem'd too much t' exceed
 The measure of his wit, and did no good.
 They resolute, for all this, do proceed
 Vnto that iudgement could not be withstood :
 The King had all he crav'd, or could compell :
 And all was done ; let others iudge, how well.

26

Now *Muse* relate a wofull accident,
 And tell the blood-shed of these mightie Peeres,
 Who (lately reconcil'd) rest discontent,
 Griev'd with disgrace, remayning in their feares :
 How-euer seeming outwardly content ;
 Yet th'inward touch, that wounded honor beares,
 Rests closely rankling, and can finde no ease,
 Till death of one side cure this great diseafe.

27

Meanes how to feele, and learne each others hart,
 By th'Abbots skill of *Westminster* is found :
 Who, secretly disliking *Henries* part,
 Inuites these Lords, and those hee meant to found ;
 Feasts them with cost, and drawes them on with art ;
 And darke, and doubtfull questions doth propound :
 Then playner speakes ; and yet vncertaine speaks :
 Then wishes well ; then off abruptly breakes.

St. 25, l. 8. 'we will not fay'!¹

St. 27, l. 2, 'By th'Abbot now'!²

28

My Lords, faith he, I feare we shall not finde
 This long-defired King, such as was thought :
 But yet, he may do well : God turne his minde :
 Tis yet new dayes : but, Ill bodes new and nought :
 Some yet speed well : though all men of my kinde
 Haue cause to doubt ; his speech is not forgot,
That Princes had too little, we too much.
 God giue him grace : but 'tis ill trusting such.

29

This open-clofe, apparent-darke discource
 Drew-on much speech : and euerie man replies :
 And euery man addes heate : and words inforce
 And vrge out wordes. For, when one man espies
 Another's minde like his, then ill breedes worse ;
 And out breaks all in th'end what closest lies.
 For, when men well haue fed, th'blood being warme,
 Then are they most imprudent of harme.

30

Bewray they did their inward boyling spight ;
 Each stirring other to reuenge their cause.
 One fayes he neuer should indure the fight
 Of that forsworne, that wrongs both Land and lawes
 Another vowed the same ; of his minde, right.
 A third t'a point more neere the matter drawes ;
 Sweares, if they would, he would attempt the thing,
 To chace th'vsurper, and replace their King.

St. 30, l. 8, misprinted 'chaste' in '.

31

Thus one by one, kindling each others fire,
 Till all inflam'd, they all in one agree :
 All resolute to prosecute their ire,
 Seeking their owne, and Countries cause to free ;
 And haue his first, that their blood did conspire.
 For, no way else, they sayd, but this, could be
 Their wrong-detained honor to redeeme :
 Which, truc-bred blood should, more then life, esteeme.

32

And let not this our new-made faithless Lord,
 Sayth *Surry*,¹ thinke, that we are left so bare
 (Though bare inough) but we wil finde a sword
 To kill him with, when he shal not beware.
 For, he that is with life and will instor'd,
 Hath, for reuenge, inough, and needes not care :
 For, time brings meanes to furnish him withall :
 Let him but wayte occasions as they fall.

33

Then, of the manner how t'effect the thing,
 Consulted was : and in the ende agreed,
 That at a Maske, and common Reuellung,
 Which was ordain'd, they should performe the deed ;
 For, that would be least doubted of the King,
 And fittest for their safetie to proceed :
 The night, their number, and the sodaine act,
 Would dash all order, and protect their fact.

¹ Thom. late Duke of Surry.
 St. 3a. l. 5, 'but stoor'd' : ll. 7, 8—

' . . . will fit and furnish all the rest
 Let him but euen attend, and doe his best ' !

34

Besides, they might vnder the faire pretence
 Of Tilts and Turnements, which they intend,
 Prouide them horse, and armour for defence,
 And all things else conuenient for their end :
 Besides, they might hold sure intelligence
 Among themselues, without suspect t'offend :
 The King would thinke, they fought but grace in Court,
 With all their great preparing in this sort.

35

A solemne oath religiously they take,
 By intermutuall vowes protesting there,
 This neuer to reueale ; nor to forfake
 So good a Cause, for danger, hope, or feare :
 The Sacrament, the pledge of faith, they take :
 And euerie man vpon his sword doth sweare,
 By Knighthood, honor, or what else should binde ;
 To assecure, the more, each others minde.

36

And when all this was done, and thought well done,
 And euerie one assures him good succeſſe,
 And easie seemes the thing to euerie one
 That nought could crosse their plot, or them suppressē :
 Yet one among the rest (whose minde not wonne
 With th'ouer-weening thought of hot excesſe,
 Nor headlong carried with the streame of will,
 Nor by his owne election led to ill)

43

" For, though some few continue resolute ;
 " Yet many shrink, which at the first would dare,
 " And be the formost men to execute,
 " If th'act, and motion at one instant were :
 " But, intermission suffers men dispute
 " What dangers are, and cast with farther care :
 " Cold doubt cauls with honor, scorneth fame :
 " And in the end, feare waighes downe faith, with shame.

44

" Then in the act, what perils shall we finde,
 " If either place, or time, or other course,
 " Cause vs to alter th'order now assign'd ?
 " Or that, then we expect, things happen worse ?
 " If either error, or a fainting minde,
 " An indiscreet amazement, or remorse,
 " In any at that instant should be found ;
 " How much it might the act, and all confound ?

45

" After the deede, the dangers are no lesse ;
 " Lest that, our forwardnes not seconded
 " By our owne followers, and accomplices
 " (Being kept backe, or flowe, or hindered)
 " The hastie multitude rush-on, t'oppresse
 " Confused weakenes, there vnsuccored ;
 " Or rayse another head, of that same race,
 " T'auenge his death, and prosecute the case.

46

" All this (my Lords) must be confidered
 " (The best and worst of that which may succeede)
 " That valour mixt with feare, boldnesse with dread,
 " May march more circumspect, with better heed.
 " And, to preuent these mischiefs mentioned,
 " Is, by our faith, our secrecie, and speed.
 " For, euen already is the worke begun,
 " And we rest all vndone, till all be done.

47

" And though I could haue wiſht another course,
 " In open fieldc t'haue hazarded my blood ;
 " Yet ſome are heere, whose loue is of that force
 " To draw my life, whom zeale hath not withſtoode :
 " But, like you not of your deſſeigne the worfe :
 " If the ſucceſſe be good, your course is good :
 " And ending well, our honor then begins.
 " No hand of ſtrife is pure, but that which wins.

48

This ſayd, a ſad ſtill silence held their mindes,
 Vpon the feareful proiect of their woe ;
 But that, not long, ere forward Furie findes :
 Incouraging perfwafions on to goe.
 We muſt (ſayd they) we wil, our honour bindes,
 Our ſafety bids, our fayth muſt haue it ſo :
 We know the worſt can come, 'tis thought vpon :
 We cannot ſhift ; being in, we muſt goe on.

St. 47, l. 1, 'And δ' (bad)'; l. 3, 'But'.

49

And on in deed they went ; but (6 !) not farre :
 A fatal stop trauerst their headlong course ;
 Their drift comes knowne, and they discouered are :
 For, some of many will be false, of force.

Aumarle became the man, that did all marre,
 Whether through indiscretion, chance, or worse :
 He makes his peace, with offring others blood ;
 And shewes the King, how all the matter stood.

50

Then lo'dismayde, confusion all possest,
 Th'afflicted troupe, hearing their plot descrive.
 Then runnes amaz'd Distresse, with sad vnrest,
 To this, to that, to flie, to stand, to hide :
 Distracted Terror knew not what was best ;
 On what determination to abide.
 At last, Despaire would yet stand to the Sword,
 To trie what friendes would doe, or fate affoord.

51

Then this, then that mans ayde, they craue, implore ;
 Poste here for helpe, seeke there their followers ;
 Coniure their friendes they had, labour for more,
 Sollicite all reputed faourers,
 Who *Richards* cause seem'd to affect before :
 And, in his name, write, pray, fende messengers ;
 To try what faith was left, if by this art
 Any would step to take Afflictions part.

52

And some were found; and some againe draw backe :
Vncertaine power could not it selfe retaine :
Intreat they may, authoritie they lacke :
And here, and there they march (but, all in vaine)
With desp'rate course ; like those that see their wracke
Euen on the Rockes of death, and yet they straine
That death may not them idly finde t'attend
Their certaine last, but worke to meet their end.

53

And long they stand not, ere the chiefe, surpriz'd,
Conclude with their deare blood their tragedie :
And all the rest, disperst run—some disguis'd—
To vnknownne coastes ; some to the shores do flye ;
Some to the woods, or whither feare aduif'd :
But running from, all to destruction hie.
The breach once made vpon a battered state,
Downe goes Distresse ; no shelter shroudes their fate.

54

And now what horror in their soules doth growe !
What sorrowes, with their friendes, and neere allies !
What mourning in their ruin'd houses now !
How many childrens plaints, and mothers cryes !
How many wofull Widowes left to bow
To sad disgrace ! what perisht families !
What heires of hie rich hopes, their thoughts must frame
To base-downe-looking pouertie and shame !

St. 54, l. 1, 'O' !.

55

This slaughter and calamitie fore-goes
 Thy eminent destruction, wofull King.
 This is the bloody Comet of thy woes,
 That doth fore-tell thy present ruyning.
 Here was thy ende decreed, when these men rose :
 And euen with theirs, this act thy death did bring ;
 Or hastened, at the least, vpon this ground :
 Yet, if not this, another had beene found.

56

Kings (Lords of times and of occasions) may
 Take their aduantage, when, and how they list :
 For, now the Realme, he thought in this dismay,
 T'auoyd like mischifes, neither would refist,
 Nor feele the wound at all ; since, by this way,
 All future disturbances would defist ;
 The roote cut off, from whence these tumults rose,
 He should haue rest, the Common-wealth repose.

57

He knew this time : and yet he would not seeme
 Too quicke to wrath, as if affecting blood ;
 But yet complaines so farre, that men might deeme
 He would 'twere done, and that he thought it good :

St. 56, l. 1, () accepted from '': l. 2, 'May take th'': l. 3, 'with
 these rebellions': l. 4, 'Vext, and turmoyl'd, was thought would not':
 l. 5, 'wound, when like confusions': l. 6, 'Should by this meanes be
 stayd, as all men wist': ll. 7-8—

'The cause be'ing once cut off, that did molest,
 The land should haue her peace, and he his rest'.

And wisht that some would so his life esteeme,
 As ridde him of these feares wherein he stood :
 And there-with eyes a Knight,¹ that then was by ;
 Who soone could learne his lesson, by his eye.

58

The man, he knew, was one that willingly
 For one good looke would hazard soule and all ;
 An instrument for any villanie,
 That needed no commission more at all :
 A great ease to the King, that should, hereby,
 Not neede in this a course of iustice call,
 Nor seeme to wil the act : for, though what's wrought
 Were his owne deed, he grieues should so be thought.

59

" So foule a thing (ô !) thou *Iniustice* art,
 " That tort'rest both the dooer and distrest.
 " For, when a man hath done a wicked part,
 " How doth he striue t'excuse, to make the best,
 " To shifft the fault, t'vnburthen his charg'd hart,
 " And glad to finde the least surmife of rest !
 " And if he could make his, seeme others sin ;
 " What great repose, what ease he findes therein !

60

This Knight ; but yet, why should I call him Knight,
 To giue impietie this reuerent stile ?
 Title of honour, worth, and vertues right,
 Should not be giuen to a wretch so vile :

¹ This Knight was Sir Pierce of Exton.
 St. 59, l. 4, 'O how he striues' : l. 8, 'O what repose' !.
 St. 60, l. 1, 'ô' !.

But pardon me, if I do not aright :
 It is because I will not here defile
 My vnstaind verse, with his opprobrious name,
 And grace him so, to place him in the same.

61

This caitife goes, and with him takes eight more
 As desperate as himfelse ; impiously bold
 (Such villaines, as he knew would not abhorre
 To execute what wicked act he would)
 And hastes him downe to *Pomfret* ; where, before,
 The restless King, conuaide, was laid in hold :
 There would he do the deed, he thought should bring
 To him great grace and fauour, with his King.

62

Whether the soule receiuess intelligence,
 By her neere *Genius*, of the bodies end
 And so imparteres a fadnesse to the sence
 Fore-going ruine, whereto it doth tend :
 Or whether Nature else hath conference
 With profound sleepe, and so doth warning send
 By prophetizing dreames, what hurt is neere,
 And giues the heauie careful hart to feare :

63

How-euer, so it is, the now sad King
 (Tost here and there, his quiet to confound)
 Feeles a straunge waight of sorrowes, gathering
 Vpon his trembling hart, and sees no ground ;
 Feeles sodaine terror bring cold shiuering ;
 Listes not to eate, still muses, sleepes vnfound ;
 His fenses droope, his steady eyes vnquicke ;
 And much he ayles ; and yet he is not sicke.

St. 60, l. 5, 'O'.

64

The morning of that day, which was his last,
 After a wearie rest rysing to paine,
 Out at a little grate his eyes he cast
 Vpon thos bordering hils, and open Plaine,
 And viewes the towne, and sees how people paſt :
 Where others libertie, makes him complaine
 The more his owne, and grieues his ſoule the more ;
 Conſerring captiue-Crownes, with freedom poore.

65

" O happie man, ſayth hee, that lo I ſee
 " Grazing his cattle in thofe pleafant fieldes !
 " If he but knew his good (how bleffed hee,
 " That feeles not what affliction Greatnes yeeldes !)
 " Other then what hee is, he would not bee,
 " Nor change his ſtate with him that Scepters wieldes :
 " Thine, thine is that true life ; That is to liue,
 " To reſt ſecure, and not riſe vp to grieue.

66

" Thou fitſt, at home, ſafe, by thy quiet fire,
 " And hearſt of others harmes ; but feeleſt none :
 " And there thou telſt of Kings, and who aspire,
 " Who fall, who riſe, who triumphs, who do mone :
 " Perhaps thou talkſt of mee, and doſt inquire
 " Of my restraint, why here I liue alone,
 " And pittieſt this my miſerable fall :
 " For, pittie muſt haue part ; enuie, not all.

St. 65, l. 7, ' O thine is ' .

St. 66, ll. 7, 8—' O know tis others ſin not my defart,
 And I could wiſh I were but as thou art ' :

¹ as 1609 and our text.

" Thrice happy you that looke, as from the
 shore,
 " And haue no venture in the wracke you see ;
 " No int'rest, no occasion to deplore
 " Other mens trauailes, while your felues fit free.
 " How much doth your sweet rest make vs the
 more
 " To see our miferie, and what we bee !
 " Whose blinded Greatnes, euer in turmoyle,
 " Still seeking happy life, makes life a toyle.

St. 67, l. 7, 'O . . . then with thy' !.
 After st. 67 (= 66) come the two following :—

But looke on mee, and note my troubled raigne,
 Examine all the course of my vext life ;
 Compare my little ioyes with my long paine,
 And note my pleasures rare, my sorrowes rife ;
 My childhood spent in others pride, and gaine,
 My youth in daunger, farther yeares in strife
 My courses croft, my deedes wrest to the worst,
 My honour spoild, my life in daunger forst.

This is my state, and this is all the good
 That wretched I haue gotten by a crowne ;
 This is the life that costes men so much blood,
 And more then bloud to make the same their owne :
 O had not I then better beene t'hause stood
 On lower ground, and safely liued vnknowne,
 And beene a heardfman rather then a king ;
 Which inexperience thinkes so sweet a thing.

These not in ².

68

" Great Dioclesian¹ (and more great therefore
 " For yeelding-vp that whereto pride aspires)
 " Reckning thy Gardens in Illiria more
 " Then all the Empire, all what th'earth admires ;
 " Thou well didst teach, that he is neuer poore
 " That little hath, but he that much desires ;
 " Finding more true delight in that small ground,
 " Then, in posseſſing all the earth, was found.

69

" Are Kings that freedome giue, themſelues not free
 " As meaner men, to take what they may giue ?
 " What, are they of ſo fatall a degree,
 " That they cannot descend from that, and liue ?
 " Vnleſſe they ſtill be Kings can they not bee,
 " Nor may they their authority furuiue ?
 " Will not my yeelded Crowne redeeme my breath ?
 " Still am I fear'd ? is there no way, but death ?

¹ *Primus imperium communicauit, & posuit Dioclesianus; & in eo ponendo, dixiffe fertur; Recipe Jupiter imperium, quod mihi commodasti.*
 St. 68, l. 1, 'O thou great Monarch': l. 2, 'ſkoring . . . vaine': l. 4, 'tookſt thoſe ſweet retires': l. 5, 'ð . . . not': in ² as in 1609 and our text.

After st. 68 (= 69) comes the following in ¹ :—

' But what do I repeating others good,
 To vexe mine owne perplexed foule the more ?
 Alas how ſhould I now free this poore bloud,
 And care-worne body from this ſtate restore ?
 How ſhould I looke for life or liuely-hood
 Kept here diſtreſt to die, condemned before,
 A ſacrifice prepared for his peace,
 That can but by my death haue his release ?' (Not in ².)

St. 69, l. 3, 'O'.

70

Scarce this word, Death, from Sorrow did proceed,
 When in rusht one, and tels him, such a knight
 Is new arriv'd, and comes from Court in speed.
 What newes sayd he, with him, that traytous wight ?
 What, more remouing yet ? alas ! what need ?
 Are we not farre ynough sent out of fight ?
 Or is this place, here, not sufficient strong
 To guard vs in ? or must we haue more wrong ?

71

By this, the bloody troope were at the dore ;
 When-as a sodaine and a strange dismay
 Inforc't them straine, who should go in before :
 One offers, and in offring makes a stay :
 An other forward fets, and doth no more :
 A third the like, and none durst make the way :
 So much the horror of so vile a deed,
 In vilest mindes, deterres them to proceed.

72

At length, as to some great aduentrous fight,
 This *Brauo* cheeres these dastards, all hee can ;
 And valiantly their courage doth incite,
 And all against one weake vnarmed man :

St. 70, l. 2, 'how'': l. 3, '... come from Court ; his name deliured'':
 l. 4, 'with him said he'': l. 5, 'remoues ? must we be farther lead?'':
 l. 6, 'yet'': l. 7, 'hath ... not strength sufficient'': l. 8, '... or haue
 they worse intent?'.

St. 72, l. 1, 'assault the knight'': l. 2, 'Cheeres vp his fainting men all
 that'.

A great exployte, and fit for such a knight ;
 Wherein, so much renowne his valor wan.
 But see, how men that verie Prefence feare,
 Which once, they knew, Authority did beare.

73

Then, on thrusts one, and he would formost be
 To shread another's blood ; but lost his owne :
 For, entring in, as foone as he did see
 The face of Maiestie, to him well knowne ;
 Like *Marius* Souldier at *Minternum*, hee
 Stood still amaz'd, his courage ouer-thrown.
 The King, seeing this, starting frō where he fate,
 Out from his trembling hand his weapon gate.

74

Thus, euen his foes, who came to bring him death,
 Bring him a weapon, that before had none ;
 That yet he might not idly lose his breath,
 But die reueng'd, in action, not alone.
 And this good chaunce, that thus much faoureth,
 He slackes not : for, he presently speedes one :
 And, Lion-like, vpon the rest he flyes :
 And here falles one, and there another lies.

75

And vp and down he trauerfes his ground ;
 Now wardes a felling blowe, now strikes againe,
 Then nimblly shiftest a thrust, then lends a wound,
 Now backe he giues, then rushes-on amaine.

St. 72, l. 5, ' . . . worthy a man of might ' : l. 6, ' Much honour wretch
 therein thy ' : l. 7, ' Ah poore weake prince, yet men that ' .

His quicke and ready hand doth so confound
 These shamefull beastes, that foure of them lie flaine :
 And all had perisht happily and well,
 But for one act, that (o !) I grieue to tell.

76

This coward Knight, seeing with shame and feare
 His men thus flaine, and doubting his owne end,
 Leapes vp into a chaire that (lo) was there,
 The-whiles the King did all his courage bend
 Against those foure, which now before him were,
 Doubting not who behind him doth attend ;
 And plyes his hands vndaunted, vnaffeard,
 And with good heart, and life for life he stird.

77

And whiles he this, and that, and each mans blowe
 Doth eye, defend, and shift, being layd-to fore,
 Backward he beares for more aduantage now,
 Thinking the wall would safegard him the more ;
 When, lo, with impious hand, o wicked thou,
 That shamefull durst not come to strike before,
 Behind him gav'st that lamentable wound,
 Which layd that wretched Prince flat on the ground.

78

Now, proditorious wretch, what hast thou done,
 To make this barbarous base assassinate
 Vpon the person of a Prince, and one
 Fore-spent with sorrow, and all desolate ?

St. 76, l. 5, 'that' ¹.

St. 77, l. 7, 'wofull deadly' ¹ : l. 8, 'that laid that most sweet' ¹.

St. 78, l. 1, 'Maister of men' ¹, ² : l. 2, 'Vnto an ouerpowred
 innocent' ¹ : l. 3, 'Lab'ring against so many, he but' ¹ : l. 4, 'And me
 poore soule with care, with sorrow spent' ¹, ².

What great aduancement hast thou hereby wonne,
 By being the instrument to perpetrate
 So foule a deed? where is thy grace in Corte,
 For such a seruice, acted in this sort?

79

First, he for whom thou doft this villanie
 (Though pleaf'd therewith) will not auouch thy fact,
 But let the weight of thine owne infamie
 Fall on thee, vnsupported, and vnbacft:
 Then, all men elfe will loath thy treacherie,
 And thou thyelfe abhorre thy proper act:
 " So th' Wolfe, in hope the Lyons grace to win
 " Betraying other beastes, loft his owne skinne.

St. 78, ll. 5-8 :—

' O could thy eies indure to looke vpon
 Thy hands diigrace, or didſt thou then relent?
 But what thou didſt I will not here deuine
 Nor straine my thoughts to enter into thine ' :

In ⁸, as st. 78, is the following :—

' But leauē thee wretch vnto black infamie
 To darke eternall horror, and diigrace,
 The hatefull skorne to all pofterie:
 The out-cast of the world, laſt of thy race.
 Of whose curſt ſeed, nature did then deny
 To bring forth more, her faire workeſ to deface:
 And as aſham'd to haue produc'd that paſt,
 She stayes her hand and makes this worſt her laſt.'

After st. 78 (= 80) comes the following :—

82

There lies that comely body all imbrude
 With that pure bloud, muſt with that fowle be ſhed:
 O that thoſe ſacred ſtreames with ſuch vile rude
 Vnhallowed matter ſhould be mingled!
 O why was groffenes with ſuch grace indude,
 To be with that ſweet mixture honoured?
 Or ſeru'd it but as ſome vile graue ordaind,
 Where an imbalmed corpeſ ſhould be containd? (So in ⁷.)

80

But now, as this sweet Prince distended lay,
 And him nor Life, nor Death, their owne could call,
 (For, Life, remouing, rid not all away ;
 And Death, though entring, had not seif'd on all)
 That short-tym'd motion had a little stay
 (The mouer ceasing) though it were but small :
 (As th'Organ-sound, a time, suruiues the stop,
 Before it doth the dying note giue vp).

81

When, lo, there streames a fpring of bloud so fast,
 From thos deepe woundes, as all imbru'd the face
 Of that accursed caytive as he past
 (After the deed effected) through the place :
 And therewithall those dying eyes did cast
 Such an vpbrayding looke on his disgrace
 (Seeming to checke so cowardly a part)
 As left th'impression euen in his hart.

St. 80, l. 1, 'These faire distended limmes' : l. 2, 'When yet' : l. 3,
 'remou'd had not rid' : l. 4, 'seaf'd not yet' : l. 5, '... that foone
 finishe shal' : l. 6, '... yet a while doth stay' :

After st. 80 (= 83) in ¹ comes this stanza :-

84.

So holdes those organs of that goodly frame
 The weake remaines of life a little space ;
 But ah full foone cold Death possest the same ;
 Set are those fun-like eies, bloudleffe that face,
 And all that comely whole a lump became,
 All that faire forme which Death could scarce disgrace,
 Lies perisht thus ; and thus vntimely fate
 Hath finisht his most miserable stafe.

St. 81 not in ¹, ².

82

And thus one King, most neere in bloud ally'd,
 Is made th'oblation for the others peace.
 Which peace yet was not hereby ratifi'd
 So, as it could all future feares release.
 For, though the other did forthwith prouide
 To haue the rumour run of his decease,
 By drawing the corps to *London*,¹ where it was
 Layd (three dayes to be feene) with open face :

83

Yet, so great was this execrable deed,
 As men would scarce therein belieue their eyes ;
 Much lesse their eares : and many sought to feed
 The easie creditours of nouelties,
 By voycing him aliue² ; how hee was freed
 By strange escape out of his miseries :
 And many did conspire now to relieu
 Him dead, who had forfaken him aliue.

¹ The Corps was conuayed from Pomfret to Londō : where it lay with open face in Paules, 3 dayes ; and after a solemne obsequie, was had to Langley and there meanely interred.

² K. Ric. bruted to be aliue after he was thus murthered : which begat a Conspiracie ; for the which, Sir Roger Clarindon, supposed to be the base sonne of the blacke Prince was executed, with diuers Friers.

St. 82, l. 1, 'thus' accepted from ¹, ², for 'this' of 1609 and our text :

ll. 3-8—' Now onely one, both name and all beside
 Intirely hath, plurality doth cease :
 He that remaines, remaines vnterrifide
 With others right ; this day doth all release :
 And henceforth he is absolutely king.
 No crownes but one, this deed confirmes the thing.' (So ².)

St. 83—91 not in ¹.

84

And many fuffed for his Causē, when now
 He had none : many wiſht for him againe,
 When they perceiv'd th'exchange did not allow
 Their hopes ſo much as they did looke to gaine,
 By traffiquing of kings ; and all ſaw how
 Their full exſpectances were in the wane.
 They had a King was more then him before ;
 But yet a king, where they were nought the more.

85

And ſure, this murthered Prince, though weake he was,
 He was not ill ; nor yet ſo weake, but that
 He ſhew'd much Martiall valour in his place,
 Aduentring oft his person for the State :
 And might amongſt our better Princes paſte ;
 Had not the flatterie, rapine, and debate
 Of factious Lords and greedie Officers
 Disgrac't his actions, and abuf'd his yeares.

86

Nor is it ſo much Princes weakenesses,
 As the corruption of their Ministers,
 Wherby the Common-wealthe receiues diſtrefs.
 For, they, attending their particulares,
 Make imperfections their aduantages
 To be themſelues both Kings and Councillors.
 And, ſure, this Common-wealthe can neuer take
 Hurt by weake kings, but ſuch as we doo make.

87

Besides, he was (which people much respect
 In Princes, and which pleases vulgarly)
 Of goodly personage, and of sweete aspect,
 Of milde acceſſe, and liberalitie ;
 And feaſtes, and ſhewes, and triumphs did affect,
 As the delights of youth and iollitie :
 But, here, the great profuſion and expence
 Of his reuenues, bred him much offence ¹ :

88

And gaue aduantage vnto enmitie,
 This grieuous accuſation to prefer ;
 " That he conſum'd the common Treafurie :
 " Wherof he being the ſimple vſager
 " But for the State (not in proprietie)
 " Did alien at his pleasure, and transfer
 " The ſame t'his minions, and to whome hee lift ;
 " By which, the Common-wealtheſt was to ſubfift.

89

" Whereby, ſayd they, the poore concuſſed State
 " Shall euer be exacted for ſupplyes.
 Which accuſation was th'occation, that
 His ſuccellour by order nullifies ²

¹ Hee had in his Court 1000. persons in ordinarie allowance of diet, 300. feruitours in his Kitchin, aboue 300. Ladies Chamberers, and Landers. His apparell was ſumptuous ; and fo was it generally, in his time : hee had one Cote of gold and ſtone, valued at 30000. markes. One enteruiew with the Fr. King at Ards, when his wife Ifabel was deliuereſt vnto him, coſt 300000. markes.

² Hen. 4. reuoketh al letters patents of Annuities granted by K. Ed. and K. Ric. Ann. reg. 6.

Many his Patents, and did reuocate
 And reassume his liberalities :
 And yet, for all these waftes, these gifts and feasts,
 He was not found a Bankrupt in his chests.¹

90

But they, who tooke to Syndicque in this forte
 The Actions of a Monarch, knew those things
 Wherein the accoumpts were likely to fall short
 Betweene the State of Kingdomes, and their Kings :
 Which presidencie, of pestilent import
 (Had not the heauens blest thy indeuourings)
 Against thee *Henry*, had beene likewise brought,
 Th'ex ample made of thy example wrought.

91

For, though this bountie, and this liberalnes,
 A glorious vertue be ; it better fits
 Great men, then kings : who, giuing in excesse,
 Giue not their owne, but others benefits :
 Which calles vp manies hopes, but pleasures lesse ;²
 Destroying far more loue, then it begets.
 For, Iustice is their Virtue : that alone
 Makes them sit sure, and glorifies the Throne.

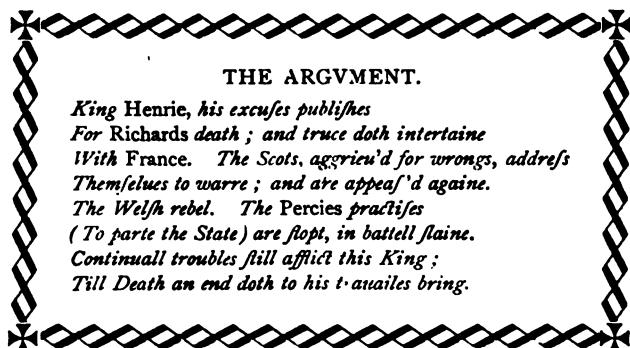
¹ When he was first surpris'd in Wales, the D. of Lancaster had in Hole
 Castle 100000 markes in coyne, and 200000, markes in Jewels : and at his
 Refignation in the Towre, 300000 poulds in coyne, befides plate and Jewels.

² A Prince, exceſſive in gifts, makes his ſubiects exceſſive in futes.

The ende of the third Booke.



THE FOVRTH BOOKE.¹



I

He bounds once ouer-gone, that hold
men in,
They neuer stay ; but on, from bad
to worse.
“ Wrongs do not leaue off there,
where they begin ;
“ But, still beget new mischieves in
their course.

Now, *Henrie*, thou hast added to thy sinne
Of usurpation, and intruding force,

¹ The ‘Fovrth Booke,’ as given here, first thus appeared in 1609. Originally—i.e. in 1595 and in 1599, 1601–1602—the ‘Fovrth Booke’ consisted of what is now the ‘Fifth’ (on which see Note at commencement of it).

A greater crime; which makes that gone before
T'appeare more then it did, and noted more.

2

For, now thou art inforc't t'apologise
With forraine States,¹ for two enormous things,
Wherein, thou dost appeare to scandalife
The publike Right, and common Cause of Kings :
Which, though (with all the skill thou canst deuise)
Thou overlay'st with fayrest colourings ;
Yet th'vnder-worke, transparent, shewes too plaine.
“ Where open acts accuse, th'excuse is vaine.

3

And these defences, are but complements,
To dallie with confining Potentates ;
Who, busied in their proper gouernments,
Do seldome tend th'affaires of other States :
Their wifedome, which to present powre consents,
Liue-dogges before dead Lyons, estimates :
“ And no man more respects these publike wrongs,
“ Then so much as t'his priuate state belongs.

4

Yet, most it seem'd the French King to import ;
As sharer in his daughters iniurie :
“ Though bloud, in Princes, links not in such sort,
“ As that it is of any powre to tye,
Where their estates may seeme t'aduenture hurt ;
Or where there is not a necessitie,
That doth combine them with a stronger chaine,
Then all these great Alliances containe.

¹ Commissioners are sent to forraine Princes, to excuse & iustifie the Kings proceedings.

5

For, though this King might haue resentiment,
 And will, t'auenge him of this iniurie :
 Yet, at that time, his State being turbulent,¹
 Factious, and full of partialitie,
 And oftentimes he himselfe impotent,
 By meanes of his Phreneticque maladie ;
 It was not likely, any good could rise
 By vndertaking such an enterprise.

6

And therefore both sides, vpon entercourse
 (As fitted best their present termes) agreed,
 The former truce continue should in force,²
 According as it had beene fore-decreed
 Vpon the match with *Richard* ; and a course
 For *Isabel* (with all conuenient speed)
 Prouided, with an honorable Traine
 Suting her state, to be sent home againe.

7

Whome willingly they would haue still retain'd,
 And matcht vnto the Prince ³ : but shee (though yong ;
 Yet sensible of that which appertain'd
 To honor, and renowne) scornd any tongue
 That offred such a motion ; and disdaynd
 To haue it thought, shee would but heare that wrong

¹ In this time of Charles 6. began the ciuile warres in Fraunce, between the Dukes of Orleans, and Burgoigne.

² The Truce made with Ric. 2. renewd for 30. yeares : but broken the next yeare after, vpon their part ; sending Iaques de Bourbon, with forces into Wales, to the ayde of Glendour.

³ The King labors to haue Q. Isabel matcht to his sonne Henry, Prince of Wales.

Mov'd to her, of her Lord, and husband dead,
To haue his murtherers race inioy his bed.

8

Besides ; the French (doubting the Gouernment,
Thus gotten, would be subiect still to strife)
Not willing were to vrge her to consent
T'accept a troublous, and vncertaine life :
And, being retrnd, she grew in th'end content
To be (at home) a Duke of *Orleance* wife¹ ;
Scap't from such stormes of powre, holding it best
To be belowe her selfe, to be at rest.

9

And so hath *Henrie* affsecur'd that side,
And therewithall his State of *Gasconie*² :
Which, on th'intelligence was notifi'd
Of *Richards* death, were wrought to mutinie ;
And hardly came to be repacif'd,
And kept to hold in their fidelitie :
So much, to him were they affectioned,
For hauing beene amongst them borne and bred.

10

These toyles abrode, these tumults with his owne
(As if the frame of all disioynted were,
With this disordred shifting of the Crowne)
Fell, in the reuolution of one yeaire.
Beside ; the Scotte (in discontentment growne,
For the detayning, and supporting here,

¹ Queene Ifabel was maried to Charles, sonne to Loyse, D. of Orleans.

² Thom. Percy E. of Worcester was sent into Gascony with 200. men at Armes and 400. Archers, to affist Sir Robert knoles Lieutenant there : where he pacified that Country, being incensed by the French to reuolt vpon their discontentment for the death of King Ric. whom they especially loued for being borne at Burdeux.

The scourge of all that kingdome, *George Dunbar*¹)
With fire and sword, proclaymes an open war ;

I I

Taking their time, in these disturbances
And newnesse of a wauering Gouvernment,
T'auenge them of their former grieuances,
And by our spoyles their fortunes to augment.
Against whose forces, *Henry* furnishes
A powrefull Army, and in person went ;
But warres with a retyring enemy,
With much more trauaile then with victorie.

I 2

And, being (by sharp, deformed Winters force)
Caus'd to retire, he findes new stormes at home,
From other Coasts arysing ; that prov'd worse
Then those, which now hee was returned from.
In *VVales*, a Cause of Law, by violent course,
Was (from a variance) now a warre become ;
And *Owen Glendour*,² who with *Gray* of late
Contests for priuate landes, now seekes a State.

I 3

Whom to repreffe, he early in the Spring,
With all prouisions fit, doth forward set ;
When straight his enemies (not purposing
To hazard battaile) to the mountaines get.

¹ George Dunbar, E. of March, flying out of Scotland, was received and
cherished in England, and warred against his Country.

² Owen Glendour, an Esquire in North-Wales, contesting with the L.
Gray of Ruthen, for certaine landes which hee claymed by inheritance ;
and being not powerful inough by his owne meanes to recover them, pro-
cur'd force and made war vpon the L. Gray ; and after attempts for the
principalitie of that Countrey. Ann. Reg. 2.

Where, after long and weary trauayling,
 Without performing any great defeat,
 He onely their prouisions wastes, and burns,
 And with some prey of Cattell home returns.

14

Wherewith, the Rebell rather was the more
 Incourag'd, then addaunted ; and begun
 T'aduenture farther then he did before ;
 Seeing such a Monarch had so little done,
 Being com'n in person, with so great a powre,
 And sodainely againe retyr'd and gone,
 " For, in this case, they helpe, who hurt so small ;
 " And he hath nothing done, that doth not all.

15

But now ¹ (behold) other new heads appeare,
 New *Hidra's* of rebellion, that procure
 More worke to doo, and giue more cause of feare ;
 And shew'd, that nothing in his State stood sure.
 And these, euen of his chiefest followers were,
 Of whome he might presume him most secure ;
 Who had th'espaciall ingins beene, to reare
 His fortunes vp, vnto the State they were.

¹ Ann. Reg. 3.

St. 15 onward form st. 86—132 of Book III. in ¹, ² (except the added stanzas intercalated, and which will be recognised from having no various readings), with various readings as from ¹: ll. 1-4—

' And yet new *Hydraes* lo, new heades appeare
 T'afflict that peace reputed then so sure,
 And gaue him much to do, and much to feare,
 And long and daungerous tumults did procure ¹, ² :

ll. 5, 'thoſe' ¹ : ll. 7, 8—

' Who whether not fo grac'd or fo preferd
 As they expected, these new factions stird ' ¹.

16

The *Percies* were the men ; men of great might,
 Strong in alliance, and in courage strong :
 Who now conspire ; vnder pretence to right
 Such wrongs, as to the Common wealth belong :
 Vrg'd either through their conscience, or despight,
 Or finding now the part they tooke was wrong :
 Or else Ambition hereto did them call,
 Or others envy'd grace ; or, rather, all.

17

And such they were, who might presume t'haue done
 Much for the king, and honour of the State ;
 Hauing the chiefest actions vnder-gone,
 Both forraine and domesticall of late :
 Beside that famous day of *Homeldon*¹ ;
 Where *Holspur* gaue that wonderfull defeat
 Vnto the Scottes, as shooke that kingdome more
 Then many Monarchs armes had before.

18

Which might perhaps aduance their mindes, so farre
 Aboue the leuell of subiection, as
 T'assume to them the glory of that war ;
 Where all things, by their powre, were brought to passe :

¹ In this battell of Homeldon, the L. Hen. Percie, furname Hot-spur, accompanied with George Dunbar E. of March, ouerthrew the Scottifh forces : where were flaine 23 Knights and 10000 of the Cōmons : the E E. of Fife, Murry, Angus, with 500. other of meane degree, taken prisoners.

St. 16, l. 3, 'That thus' : l. 4, 'The crooked courses they had suffered long' : l. 5, 'Whether their conscience vrged them' : l. 6, '... that they saw' : l. 7, 'that.'

After st. 16 (= 87) comes st. 20 (= 88), where see various readings. So st. 89 of ¹ is st. 21 of our text, where also see various readings, and so onward.

They, being so mightie, and so popular,
 And their command so spacious as it was,
 Might (in their State) forget, how all these things
 That subiects doo effect, must be their Kings.

19

And so fell after into discontent,
 For that the king requir'd to haue, as his,
 Those Lords were taken prifoners ; whome they ment
 To hold still as their proper purchases :
 Then, that he would not, at their sute, consent
 To worke their Cofin Mortimers release,
 Out of the Rebell Owen Glendour's hands ;
 Who held him prisoner, in disgracefull bands.

20

But be, what will, the cause ; strong was their plot.
 Their parties great, meanes good, the season fit,
 Their practice close, their faith suspected not,
 Their states far off, and they of wary wit :
 Who, with large promises, so woe the Scot
 To aide their Cause, as he consents to it ;
 And glad was to disturne that furious streme
 Of warre, on vs, that else had swallowed them.

21

Then ioyne they with the Welsh ; who, now wel
 In Armes and action dayly grew more great. [train'd,
 St. 20, l. 1, 'What caufe foever were' 1, 2 : l. 2, 'th'occasion' 1, 2 :
 l. 5, 'draw in' 1 : l. 6, 'he likes, and yeeldes' 1 : ll. 7, 8—
 ' Not for the loue of them, or for their good,
 But glad hereby of meanes to shed our bloud' 1.
 St. 21, l. 1, 'fitly' 1 : ll. 2, 3—
 ' And all in armes vnder a mighty head
 Grea Glendour, who long warr'd, and . . . ' 1 :

Their Leader, by his wiles, had much attaynd,
 And done much mischiefe on the English State :
 Beside, his prisoner *Mortimer* he gain'd
 From being a foe, to b'his confederate ;
 A man the King much fear'd : and well he might ;
 Least he shoulde looke whether his Crowne stood right.

22

For, *Richard* (for the quiet of the State)
 Before he tooke those Irish warres in hand,
 About Succession doth deliberate :
 And, finding how the certayne Right did stand,
 With full consent this man did ordinate
 The heyre apparent to the Crowne and Land ;¹
 Whose competencie was of tender touch :
 Although his might was small, his right was much.

23

With these, the *Percies* them confederat,
 And (as three heads) conioyne in one intent :
 And (instituting a Triumvirates)
 Do part the Land, in triple gouernment ;

¹ In the 9. yeere of the raigne of King Richard 2. was by Parlement ordained Roger E. of March, heir apparent to the Crowne. This Roger was the sonne of Edmond Mortimer, who married Philippa the only daughter of Leonel D. of Clarence, the third son of King Ed. 3. who by her had issue this Roger & Elizabeth : Roger had issue 4. children, all which, saue only Anne, dying without issue : Anne was married to Rich. E. of Cambridge, second sonne to Edmond D. of Yorke. This Rich. beheaded at Southampton, had issue by Anne, Richard, surnamed Plantagenet, after Duke of Yorke.

St. 21, ll. 4-6—‘ Sharp conflicts made, and many vanquished
 With whom was *Edmond Earle* of March retain'd ;
 Being firſt his prisoner, now confedered.’

St. 22, l. 7, ‘ Then iudge of this the king might merely ’ !

Dividing thus, among themselues, the State :
 The *Percies* should rule all the North, from *Trent* ;
 And *Glendour, VVales* ; the Earle of *March* should be
 Lord of the South, from *Trent*: and so they 'gree.¹

24

Then, those faire bayts these Trouble-States still vse
 (*Pretence of common good*, the Kings ill Course)
 Must be cast forth, the people to abuse,
 And giue their Cause, and them, the better force.
 The king, for tyranny, they doo accuse,
 By whom the State was growne from bad to worse ;
 A periur'd man, who held all faith in scorne :
 Whose trusted Oathes had others made forsworne.

25

And, therewithal, the execrable act,
 On their late murthered King, they aggrouate :
 How he employ'd the dooers of the fact, —
 Whom afterwards hee did remunerate :
 And dayly such taxatiōns did exact,
 As were against the Order of the State ;

¹ The *Percies* article against Hen. 4. Ann. Reg. 4
 St. 23, l. 8, 'thus' !.

St. 24, l. 1, 'two helpe which still such actors find' !, : l. 2, 'dis-
 grace' ! : l. 3, 'Doth fit their course, and draw the vulgar mind' ! : l. 4,
 'To further them and aide them in this case' ! : l. 5, 'They accynd
 for cruell, and vnkind' ! : l. 6, 'That did . . . and crowne, and all
 deface' !.

St. 25, l. 1, 'Befides the odious detestable' !, : l. 2, 'that' ! : l. 3,
 'Making it his that so had will'd' ! : l. 4, 'That he the doers' ! : l. 5,
 'Then . . . taxes daily doth' ! : l. 6, 'That . . . orders' !.

Prefuming, thofe great summes hee did impose,
About his priuate vſes to diſpoſe :

26

And how he was inuironed with ſuch
As had poſſeſt him ; and in ſlanderous ſort
Accuſ'd them ſo, as they durft not approche
To cleare themſelues of ſuch vniuſt report :
And, thereupon, they flatly diſauouch
To yeld him more obedience, or ſupport :
And, as t'a periurd Duke of *Lancaster*,
Their Cartell of Defiance they preferre ;

27

Protesting, theſe obiections to make good,
With ſword in hand, and to confirme and ſeale
Their vndertaking, with their deareſt bloud,
As Procurators for the Common-weale :
And that vpon their Conſciences it ſtood,
And did impoſt their dutie and their zeale
Vnto the State, as Peeres, to ſee redreſt
Thofe miseries wherewith it was oppreſt.

St. 25, ll. 7, 8.—

' And with all theſe or worfe they him affaile
Who late of others with the like preualid ' ^{1, 2}.

After st. 25 (= 93) comes the following in ^{1, 2} :—

' Thus doth contentious proud mortality
Afflict each other, and itſelue torment :
And thus o thou mind-tortring misery
Reſtles ambition, borne in diſcontent,
Turn, stand, retoſſeſt with iniquity,
The vnconſtant courses frailty did inuent :
And fowliſt faire order and defilte the earth,
Foſtring vp warre, father of bloud and dearth ' ¹.

St. 27 not in ^{1, 2}.

II.

19

28

Great seem'd their Cause : and greatly, too, did adde
 The peoples loue thereto, these crymes impof'd ;
 That many gathered to the troupes they had,
 And many sent them aide though vndisclof'd :
 So that, the King, with all maine speed, was glad
 Both by his remonstrances well compos'd,
 And with his sword (his best defence) prouide
 To right himselfe, and to correct their pride :

29

Divulgynge, first, a fayre Apologie
 Of his cleere heart, touching the foule report
 Of that affaintate : which vtterly
 He doth abiure ; protesting, in no sort
 T'agree thereto, in will or priuitie :
 And, how he had beene vsed to extort,
 The State could witnesse best ; by whose consent
 Was granted what he had, in Parlement.

30

Which neuer was, but onely one supply,
 In foure yeares troublous and expensiuue Raigne :
 And that, vpon extreame necessitie,
 The safetie of the publicke to maintaine :
 And that the Percies best could testifie,
 How most that mony issued was, againe ;

St. 28, l. 1, 'the' ¹ : l. 2, 'rehearſt' ¹ : l. 4, 'More do flocke from corts
 diſperſt' ¹ : ll. 5-8—

' But when the King had heard theſe neuer ſo bad,
 Th'vnlookt for dangerous toyle more nearly perſt
 For b̄t t'wards *Wales* t'appeafe thoſe tumults there,
 H'is forſt diuert his course, and then forbare.'

St. 29—32 not in ¹, ².

To whom the same was rendred, to the end
To warre the Scot, and Borders to defend :

31

And that the rest was, to the same effect
For which it was obtaynd, in like sort, spent.
And where-as they did slanderously obiect,
How that they durst not hazard to present
In person their defences, in respect
He was incenst by some malevolent ;
It was most false : for, he knew no defence
They were to make, till now they made offence.

32

And how far, he had been, from cruelty,
Both *VVales*, and *Scotland* could him witnes beare ;
Where, thofe effects of his great clemencie,
In sparing bloud, do to his cost appeare :
Much more, his subiects finde his lenitie ;
Whose loue he seekes to haue, and not their feare.
“ But thus, said he, they euer do pretend
“ To haue receiv'd a wrong, who wrong intend.

33

Not to giue time vnto th'increasing rage,
And gathering furie, foorth hee marcht with speed ;
Leaft more delay, or giuing longer age
To th'euill growne, it might the cure exceed.
All his best men at Armes, and Leaders sage,
All he prepar'd hee could ; and all did need.
For, to a mighty worke thou goest, & King,
That equall spirits, and equall powres shal bring.

St. 33, l. 8, ‘To such a field that power to power’ !

34

There shall young *Hotspur*, with a fury led,
 In grapple with thy sonne, as fierce as hee :
 There Martiall *VVorster*, long experienced
 In forraine armes, shall come t'incounter thet.
 There *Douglas*, to thy *Stafford*, shall make head :
 There *Vernon*, for thy valiant *Blunt*, shall be.
 There, shalt thou finde a doubtfull bloody day ;
 Though sickenesse keep *Northumberland* away.

35

Who yet reserv'd (though, after, quit for this)
 Another tempest on thy head to rayse ;
 As if, still, wrong-reuenging *Nemesis*
 Meant to afflict all thy continuing dayes :
 And here this field hee happely doth misse,
 For thy great good ; and therefore well hee stayes.
 What might his force haue done, being brought thereto,
 When that already, gauē so much to doo ?

36

The swift approche, and vnexpected speed,
 The King had made vpon this new-rayd force,¹
 In th'vnconfirmed troupes, much feare did breed,
 Vntimely hind'ring their intended course :

St. 34, l. 2, 'Meete with thy forward'': l. 3, 'warlike'. In margin of¹, 'The son to the Earle of Northüberland'.

St. 35, l. 4, 'Did meane t'afflict all thy continuall'': l. 5, 'yet . . . might'': l. 7, 'ioynd'.

¹ The K. hastened forward by George Dunbar, was in sight of his enemies lying in Campe neer to Shrewsburie, sooner then hee was expected: for the Percies supposed he would haue stayde longer then hee did, at Burton vpon Trent, for the comming of his Councell with other forces which were there to meeete him. Whereupon they left to affaile the Towne of Shrewsbury; and prepared to encounter the kings forces. Ann. Reg. 4.

The ioyning with the Welsh (they had decreed)
 Was hereby dasht ; which made their Cause the worse :
Northumberland, with forces from the North,
 Expected to be there, was not set forth.

37

And yet, vndaunted *Hotspur*, seeing the King
 So neere arriv'd ; leauing the worke in hand,
 With forward speed his forces marshalling,
 Sets forth, his farther comming to withstand :
 And, with a cheerefull voyce encouraging
 His well experienc't and aduentrous Band,
 Brings on his Army, eger vnto fight ;
 And plac't the fame, before the King in fight.

38

“ This day (faith he) my valiant trusty friendes,
 “ What-euer it doth giue, shal glory giue ;
 “ This day, with honor, frees our State, or endes
 “ Our misery with fame, that still shal liue :
 “ And doo but thinke, how well the fame he spends,
 ✓ “ Who spends his blood, his Country to relieue.
 “ What ? haue we hands, and shall we seruile bee ?
 “ Why were swordes made ? but, to preserue men free.

St. 36, l. 6, ‘ Stopt . . . part ’¹.

St. 37, l. 2, ‘ approch'd ’¹ : l. 6, ‘ By his great spirit his well imboldned ’¹ :
 l. 7, ‘ . . . a strong host of forme resolued might ’¹ : l. 8, ‘ . . . his
 troupes ’¹.

St. 38, l. 1, ‘ & faithfull valiaunt ’¹ : st. 38—42 not in ^{1,3} : l. 5, ‘ this day ’¹ :

ll. 7, 8—‘ Our holie cause, our freedome and our right,
 Sufficient are to moue good mindes to fight ’¹.

39

Besides, th'assured hope of victorie,
 Which we may euen promise on our side,
 Against this weake constrainyd company ;
 Whom force and feare, not will and loue doth guide :
 Against a Prince, whose foul impiety
 The heauens doo hate, the earth cannot abide :
 Our number being no lesse, our courage more,
 No doubt we haue it, if wee worke therefore.

40

This sayd, and thus resolv'd, euen bent to charge
 Vpon the King ; who well their order view'd,
 And wary noted all the course at large
 Of their proceeding, and their multitude :
 And deeming better, if he could discharge
 The day with safetie, and some peace conclude,
 Great proffers sendes of pardon and of grace
 If they would yeeld, and quietnesse imbrace.¹

41

Which though his feares might driue him to propose,
 To time his businesse, for some other ende ;
 Yet, sure, hee could not meane t'haue peace with those,
 Who did in that supreame degree offend :

¹ The Abbot of Shrewsbury and one of the Clearks of the priuie seale were fet from the K. to the Percies to offer them pardon if they wold come to any reaonable agreement. Wherupon the E. of Worcester comming to the K. receiued many kind proffers : and promising to moue his Nephew therin, did at his returne, as is sayd, conceale them, and hastened on the battel ; which was fought neer Shrewsbury. An. Reg. 4.

St. 39, l. 2, 'euen promise' accepted from 'fore-promise' of 1609 and '23 : l. 8, 'What need we doubt' !.

St. 40, l. 3, 'carefull . . . forme' !.

Nor were they such, as would bee wonne with showes ;
 Or breath of oathes, or vowes could apprehend :
 So that in honor, th'offers, he doth make,
 Were not for him to giue, nor them to take.

42

And yet this much his courses doo approue,
 He was not bloudy, in his Naturall ;
And yeeld he did to more, then might behoue
His dignitie, to haue dispenst withall :
 And, vnto *VVorster*, hee himselfe did moue
 A reconcilement to be made of all :
 But *VVorster*, knowing it could not be secur'd,
 His Nephews on-set (yet for all) procur'd.

43

Which seeing the King (with greater wrath incenst)
 Rage, against furie, doth with spedde prepare.
 And though, sayd he, I could haue wel dispenst
 With this dayes bloud, which I haue fought to spare ;
 That greater glory might haue recompens
 The forward worth of these, that so much dare ;
 That we might good haue had by th'ouerthrowne,
 And th'wounds we make, might not haue beene our
 owne :

44

Yet, since that other mens iniquitie
 Calles-on the sword of wrath, against my will ;
 And that themselues exact this crueltie,
 And I constrayned am this bloud to spill ;

St. 43, l. 1, 'But this refusd . . . with wrath' ; l. 3, 'ð faith . . .
 though I could haue' ; l. 7, 'honor had' ; l. 8, 'That'.

Then on, braue followers, on courageously,
True-harted subiects, against traytors ill :
And spare not them, who seeke to spoyle vs all
Whose foul confused end, soone see you shal.

45

Forth-with, began these fury-mouing sounds,
The notes of wrath, the musicke brought from Hell,
The ratling Drums (which trumpets voyce confounds)
The cryes, th'incouragements, the shouting shrill ;
That, all about, the beaten ayre rebounds
Confused thundring-murmurs horrible ;
To robbe all sense, except the sence to fight.
Well hands may worke : the minde hath lost his fight.

46

O warre ! begot in pride and luxurie,
The child of malice, and reuengeful hate ;
Thou impious good, and good impietie,
That art the foul refiner of a State ;

St. 44, l. 5, 'my maisters' ¹.After st. 44 (= 105) comes this in ^{1, 2} :—

106.

' Straight moues with equall motion equall rage
The like incensed armies vnto blood,
One to defend, another fide to wage
Foule ciuill war ; both vowes their quarrel good :
All the mad heate the bloud doth now inrage
Both who the deed prouokes and who withstood,
That valor here is vice, here manhood sin ;
The forwardst hands doth & least honor win :

l. 5, 'the' is misprinted 'to.'

St. 45, l. 1, 'But now begin' ^{1, 2} : l. 4, 'shrell' ¹ : l. 6, 'Thundring confused' ¹.St. 46, l. 2, 'wrath and of diffention' ¹ : ll. 3, 4—

' Horrible good ; mischiefe necessarie,
The foule reformer of confusion' ¹ :

Vniust-iust scourge of mens iniquitie,
 Sharpe-easer of corruptions desperate ;
Is there no meanes but that a sin-sicke Land
Must be let blood with such a boyterous hand ?

47

How well mightst thou haue, here beene spar'd this
 Had not wrong-counfauld *Percy* beene peruerse ? [day,
 Whose forward hand, inur'd to woundes, makes way
 Vpon the sharpest fronts of the most fierce :
 Where now an equall surie thrusts to stay
 And backe-repell that force, and his disperfe :
 Then these affaile, then those re-chase againe,
 Till stayd with new-made hils of bodies flaine.

48

There, lo that new-appearing glorious starre,
 Wonder of Armes, the terror of the field,
 Young *Henrie*,¹ laboring where the stoutest are,
 And euen the stoutest forceth backe to yeeld ;
 There is that hand boldned to bloud and warre,
 That must the sword, in wondrous actions, wield :
 Though better, he had learnd with others bloud ;
 A lesse expence to vs, to him more good.

St. 46, l. 5, 'our' : l. 6, 'Cruell recurer of corruption' : ll. 7, 8—

'O that these sin-sicke states in need should stand,
 To be let bloud with such a boystrous hand'.

St. 47, l. 1, 'And o how well thou hadft' ; 'And how well hadft
 thou' : l. 3, 'Yong vndanger'd hand now rash makes way' : l. 6,
 'rebeat-backe'¹

¹ Prince Henry, at this Battel, was not 17 yeares of age.

St. 48, l. 8, 'thee'.

49

Yet here had he not speedy succour lent
 To his indangered father, neere opprest,
 That day had seene the full accomplishment
 Of all his trauailes, and his finall rest :
 For, *Mars-like Douglas* all his forces bent
 T'incounter, and to grapple with the best ;
 As if disdayning any other thing
 To doo, that day, but to subdue a King.

50

And three, with fierie courage, he affailes ;
 Three, all as kings adornd in royll wise :
 And each successiue after other quailes ;
 Still wondring, whence so many Kings should rise.

St. 49, l. 1, 'Hadst thou not there lent present speedy ayd' ^{1, 2} : l. 2,
 'they . . . nerely tyrde' ¹ : ll. 3, 4—

'Whom fierce incountring *Douglas* ouerlaid,
 That day had there his troublous life expirde' ¹ :
 ll. 5, 6—'Heroycall Couragious *Blunt* araid
 In habite like as was the king attirde,
 And deem'd for him, excusd that fate with his,
 For he had what his Lord did hardly misse.'

In margin 'Which was fir Walter Blunt.'
 After st. 49 (= 111) comes this in ¹ :—

'For thought a king, he would not now disgrace
 The perfon then suppos'd, but prince-like shewes
 Glorious effects of worth that fit his place,
 And fighting dyes, and dying ouerthrowes :
 Another of that forward name and race
 In that hotte work his valiant life bestowes ;
 Who bare the standard of the king that day,
 Whose colours ouerthowne did much difmaie.'

In margin 'Another Blunt which was the king's Standard-bearer.'
 St. 50—52 not in ^{1, 2}.

And, doubting leſt his hand or eye-fight fayles,
 In these confounded, on a fourth hee flyes,
 And him vnhorſes too : whom had hee ſped,
 He then all Kings, in him, had vanquished.

51

For *Henrie* had diuided, as it were,
 The person of himſelfe, into ſoure parts ;
 To be leſſe knowne, & yet known euery where,
 The more to animate his peoples harts :
 Who, cheered by his preſence, would not ſpare
 To execute their beſt and worthyeſt parts.
 By which, two ſpeciall things eſſected are ;
 His ſafetie, and his ſubiects better care.

52

And neuer worthy Prince a day did quit
 With greater hazard, and with more renoune,
 Then thou didſt, mightie *Henry*, in this fight ;
 Which onely made thee owner of thine owne :
 Thou neuer proov'dſt the Tenure of thy right
 (How thou didſt hold thy easie-gotten Crown)
 Till now : and, now, thou ſhew'ſt thy ſelue Chiefe Lord
 By that eſpecial right of kings ; the *Sword*.

53

And deare it cost, and much good bloud is ſhed
 To purchase thee, a fauing victorie :
 Great *Stafford* thy high Conſtable lyes dead,
 With *Shorly*, *Clifton*, *Gawſell*, *Caluerly*,

¹ Edmond, E. of Stafford, Conſtable of England.

St. 53, l. 1, 'ð much' : l. 2, 'this looſing victory' : ll. 3-8—

'O trauayld king : yet haſt thou conqueſted
 A doubtful day, a mightie enemy ;

And many more ; whose braue deathes witnesſed
 Their noble valour and fidelitie :
 And many more had left their deareſt bloud
 Behind, that day, had *Hotspur* longer stood.

54

But he, as *Douglas*, with his furie ledde,
 Rushing into the thickest woods of speares,
 And brakes of swordes, still laying at the Head
 (The life of th'Army) whiles he nothing feares
 Or spares his owne, comes all inuironed
 With multitude of powre, that ouer-beares
 His manly worth : who yeeldes not, in his fall ;
 But fighting dyes, and dying kils withal.

55

What Arke, what trophey, what magnificence
 Of glory, *Hot-spurre*, hadſt thou purchas't here ;
 Could but thy Cause, as fayre as thy pretence,
 Be made vnto thy Country to appeare !

But þ what woundes, what famous worthyes dead !
 That makes the winner looke with sorrowing eye :
 Magnanimous *Stafford* loft, that much had wrought,
 And valiant *Shorly* who great glory gote.'

In margin 'Sir Hugh Shorly.'

After st. 53 (- 113) comes this in ¹ :—

' Such wrack of others bloud thou didſt behold,
 O furious *Hotspur*, ere thou loſt thine owne !
 Which now once loft that heate in thine waxt cold,
 And ſoone became thy Armie ouerthrowne ;
 And þ that this great ſpirit, this courage bold,
 Had in ſome good caufe here rightly showne !
 So had not we thus violently then
 Haue term'd that rage which valor ſhould haue been.'

This is st. 121 in ². Our st. 83 follows this, which ſee for various readings.
 St. 55—82 not in ¹, ².

Had it beene her protection and defence
 (Not thy ambition) made thee sell so deare
 Thy selfe this day; shee must haue here made good
 An euerlasting Statüe for thy bloud.

56

Which thus misspent, thy Army prefently,
 (As if they could not stand, when thou wert downe)
 Disperst in rout, betooke them all to flie :
 And *Douglas*, faint with wounds, & ouer-throwne,
 Was taken ; who yet wonne the enemie
 Which tooke him (by his noble valour showne,
 In that dayes mighty worke) and was preserv'd
 With all the grace, and honor he deserv'd.

57

WVorc'fer (who had escap't vnhappily
 His death in battel) on a Scaffold dyes,¹
 The next after, in the company
 Of other chiefest of that enterprise.
 And, so, the tempest of this mutinie
 Became allay'd ; and those great ieoperdies
 Blowne-ouer in this fort, the Coasts well cleer'd,
 But for one threatning cloud, that yet appear'd.

58

Northumberland (recouered) still out stands,
 The principall of this great family
 And faction ; hauing *Berwike* in his hands,
 With other holdes ; strong by confed'racie
 With *Scotland* ; mighty by his owne command :
 And, likely now, his vtmost powre to trie,

¹ Tho. Perciè E. of Worcester, with Sir Richard Vernon and the Baron of Kinderton, were taken in the Battell and beheaded.

T'auenge him on the ruine of his Bloud,
And ioyne with *Wales*; which yet vndanted stood.

59

Which mov'd the king (who had too much indur'd
In this dayes worke, to hazard new againe)
By all the aptest meanes could be procur'd
To lay to draw him in, by any traine.
And write he did, and vow'd, and him assur'd
(Vpon his princely word) to intertwaine
With former grace, if hee would but submit,
And come to yeeld th'obedience that was fit.

60

The Earle, be'ing now by this defeat dismay'd
(And fearing his confederates would fayle
With Fortune, and betray, rather then ayde,
Those who are downe; being for their owne auayle)
Relyng on his Sov'raignes oath obey'd;
Which, with his tender griefs, did much preuaile:
And in hee came, and had no detryment,
But (for a shew) some short imprisonment.

61

The Parlement, that afterward insu'd,
Restor'd him t'all his dignities and landes.
And now none, but the Welsh, seem'd to seclude
The king, from hauing wholly in his hands
All peace within: and them he had pursu'd
Whiles this braue army, with these ready bands,
Were yet on foot; could he but haue got pay
To hold them, and his charge of war defray.

62

But, that hee could not gaine, though all the wayes
 That might be wrought, he labours to procure
 Meanes to effect the same. But, those delayes,
 And long protraction, which he must indure
 By way of Parlement, so much betrayes
 The opportunitie, that might secure
 His vndertaking ; as, the occasion, lost,
 Draue both the State, and him, to greater cost.

63

For, now the Rebell, thus forborne, growes strong
 Both in his reputation and successe :
 For, hauing with his powre held out so long,
 Many aduenture (with more forwardnesse)
 To yeeld him ayd, and to support his wrong :
 And forraine Princes (in his businesse
 Whom hee sollicites) now wil lend their hand
 To hould him vp ; seeing, himselfe can stand.¹

64

And thus he prospers ; whiles, the King here spent
 Much time to leuie treasure, to maintaine
 His charge abrode : which, with that discontent,
 That murmure, those denials, hee doth gaine,²
 As that hee findes it euen as turbulent
 To warre for it, as with it, all his Raigne ;
 Though hee had those informents of expence,
 Both for offence, retaynements, and defence.

¹ The Fr. K. sendes aide to Owen Glendour with 140. shippes, which landed at Milford Hauen. An. Reg. 6.

² An. Reg. 6. with much adoo the Laitie granted 2 fifteenes, vpon condition that the L. Furniuall should receiue all the mony, and fee it to bee spent in the K. warres.

65

For, here beside these troubles in the Land,
 His large Dominions, held abrode, require
 A plentiful and a prepared hand
 To guard them ; where so mightie men aspire
 T'affaile, distract and trouble his Command,
 With hopes, with promises, with sword and fire :
 And then as deepe importes, his Coastes to cleere ;
 Which, by his neighbors, much infested were.¹

66

The *Flemings, Britaines, with the French and all,*
 Attempt incursions, and worke much despight :
Orleance, for Guien : and here the Conte, Saint *Paul*,
 For *Calais* labours,² and the *Ile of Wight*.
 Wherein, though neither had successe at all ;
 Yet *Cleremont* ouercame, and wonne by fight
 Important Holdes, in *Gasconie* the-while,
 And did the English much distresse and spoyle.³

67

All which require prouisions to withstand :
 And all are succord with great prouidence :
 A Nauie, to secure the Seas, is mann'd,
 And forces sent to *Calais*,⁴ for defence.

¹ The D. of Orleans with an Army of 6000. men entred into Guien, and besieged Vergi, the space of 3. moneths, & return'd without obtaining it.

² An. Reg. 5. The Conte Cleremont, Sonne to the D. of Burbon, with Mon. de la Bret, wonne diuers Castles in Gasconie. The same time the Conte Sa. Paul inuadeth the Ile of Wight, with 1600. men.

³ An. Reg. 6. The Cont Saint Paule besiegeth the Castle of Marke within 3. miles of Calais. The Brittaines vnder the conduct of the L. of Cailliis spoyled and burnt the Towne of Plimmouth.

⁴ The K. sends 4000. men to Calais, and 3000. to the Seas, vnder the conduct of his second sonne Tho. of Lancaster after D. of Clarence.

And wherein other parts defectiue stand,
They are supply'd, with carefull diligence :
So that his subiects could not but well knowe,
That what they granted, he did sure bestowe.

68

Nor did hee spare himselfe, nor his ; but (bent
All-wholly vnto actiue Worthyneffe)
The Prince of *VVales* vnto his Prouince sent ;
Where, hee was sure, hee should not take his easie :
His second sonne is, with the Earle of *Kent*,
Employd (as Gouernour) to keepe the Seas.
A third¹ (though very yong) likewise sent forth
With *Westmerland*, attends vnto the North.

69

Thus were they bred, who after were to bee
Men amongst men : here, with these graue Adioynts
(These learned Maisters) they were taught to see
Themselves, to read the world, and keep their points.
Thus were they entred in the first degree
(And Accedence) of action ; which acquaints
Them, with the Rules of Worth and Noblenes :
Which, in true Concord, they learn'd well t'expresse.

70

And whiles h'attends the State thus carefully,
The Earle of *Marches* children are conuay'd
Out of the Towre of *VWindfor*, secretly ;
Being prisoners there, not for their merit lay'd,
But, for their Bloud ; and to the ende-whereby
This Chayne of Nature might be interlay'd

¹ John, after D. of Bedford, sent with Ralph Neuile E. of Westmerland, into the North.

Betweene the Father and his high intents,
To hold him backe, to saue these innocents.

71

For which attempt (though it were frustrated
By their recouerie, who were got againe)
Aumarle (now Duke of *Yorke*) is chalenged,
By his owne sister,¹ to haue layd that trayne ;
Who (late) her Lord, with others ruined,
In secrely betraying them, t'obtaine
His grace and peace : which yet contents him not.
For, Who hath grace and peace by treason got ?

72

So much did loue, t'her executed Lord,
Predominate in this faire Ladies hart,
As in that region, it would not afford
Nature a place, to rest in any part
Of her affections ; but that she abhord
Her proper blood, and left to doo the part
Of sisterhood, to doo that of a wife ;
T'auenge a Husbands death, by Brothers life.

73

Vpon which accusation, presently
The Duke committed is, without much stirre
Or vulgar noyse ; for that it tenderly
Did touch the secretſt wounds of *Lancaster* :
When streight, another new conspiracie
(As if it were a certaine successor

¹ The Lady Spencer, sister to Edward D. of Yorke, late wife to Tho. L. Spencer (executed at Bristow, An. Reg. 1) accused her brother to be the chiefe author of conuaying away the E. of Marches sons out of the Towre of Windsor.

Ally'd to this) ingendred in the North,
Is by th' Archbishop *Scroope* with power brought forth¹:

74

And with faire zeale, and pietie, approv'd
To be for th'vnuerfall benefit
And succour of the people, who (foone mov'd
By such perfwaders, as are held vpright ;
And for their zeale, and charitie belov'd)
Vse not t'examine if the Cause be right,
But leap into the toyle, and are vndon
By following them that they rely'd vpon.

75

Here, new aspersions, with new obloquies,
Are layde on old deserts ; and future ill
On present sufferings, bruted to aryse,
That farther grievances ingender wil.
✓ And then concussion, rapine, pilleries,
Their Catalogue of accusations fill.
Which to redresse, they doo presume to make
✓ Religion to auow the part they take.

76

And euen as *Canterburie* did produce
A Pardon to aduance him to the Crown ;
The like now *Yorke* pronounces, to induce
His faction for the pulling of him down²:

¹ Hen. Percie E. of North. againe conspires against the K. with³ Rich. Scroope Archbifhop of Yorke, Tho. Mowbraie E Marhal, Tho. L. Bar-dolph, and others. They assembled the Citizens of Yorke with³ the Country adioyning to take their part for the commodity of the Realme.

² They divulge grievous Articles against the King.

³ The Archb. of York offers pardon to all that take their part against the King.

Whilst th'ignorant, deceiv'd by this abuse,
 Makes others ends to be as if their owne.
 But, what wold these haue don against the crimes,
 Oppressions, ryots, wastes of other times ?

77

Since now they had a Monarch, and a man,
 Rayf'd by his worth, and by their owne consent,
 To gourne them, and workes the best he can
 T'aduance the Crowne, and giue the State cōtent ;
 Commits not all to others care, nor ran
 An idle course, or on his Minions spent.
 " But, thus the Horse at first bites at the Bit :
 " That after is content to play with it.

78

Grown to a mighty powre (attending now
 Northumberland, with his prepared ayde)
 The Bishop (by a *parle*) is, with a shewe
 Of combination, cunningly betrayde
 By Westmerland¹ : whose wit did ouerthrowe,
 Without a sword, all these great feares, and stayd
 The mightiest danger, that did euer yet
 Thy Crowne and State, disturbed *Henrie*, threat.

79

For which, this reuerent Priest with *Mowbray* dyes :
 Who both, drawne on, with passion of despight,
 To vndertake this fatall enterprise
 (The one his brothers² bloud-shed to requite ;

¹ The E. of Westmerland, with Iohn D. of Lancaster, gathered an Armie
 against the conspiratours : whose power being too great for the, the E. made
 semblance to ioyne with the Archb. for redresse of such greuances as he pre-
 tended ; and so circumuented and disfurnisht him of his forces. An. Reg. 6.

² The Archb. was brother to William Scroope E. of Wiltshire, Treasurer
 of England, before beheaded.

The other for his fathers¹ iniuries)
 Did wrong themselues, and did not others right.
 ✓ For, who through th'eyes of their affections looke,
 And not of iudgement, thus are ouer-tooke.

80

Whereof, when newes came to *Northumberland*
 (Who seldome other then of miserie
 Seemes borne to heare ; being euer behind hand
 With Fortune, and his opportunitie)
 To *Scotland* flies : where, giuen to vnderstand
 Of some intrapment by conspiracie,
 Gets into *VVales* : whence hee aduentured
 T'attempt another day ; and lost his head.²

81

Whereby, once more those Parts are quieted,
 When-as the King (who neuer had his brow
 Seene free from sweat, nor hart from trouble rid)
 Was, with suspition that his sonne grew now
 ✓ Too popular, and forward,³ so much fed
 By wicked instruments (who well knew how
 To gaine by Princes feares) as he thereby
 Fell, in his grieve, to great extreamitie.

¹ Tho. Mowbray E. Marshall, sonne to the Duke of Norfolke, banished about the quarrell with H. Bullingbrooke.

² The E. of North. returning out of Wales recouers new forces in Yorke-shire, and is with the L. Bardolph ouercome at Bramham Moore, and slaine in the Battail, An. Reg. 9.

³ The K. growes iealous of his sonne, Hen. Prince of Wales : who, with a better minde then fashion, came to his Father and cleared himself. An. Reg. 13.

82

Which when that vertuous Prince (who borne to bee
 The module of a glorious Monarch) heard,
 With humble protestations did so free
 His fathers feares, and his owne honor cleer'd,
 As that he plainly made the world to see
 How base, Detraction and Deceipt appear'd ;
 And that a hart, so nobly built, could not
 Containe (within) a thought, that wore a blot.

83

Wherewith, the king betakes him to some peace ;
 Yet to a peace, much like a sicke-mans sleep
 (Whose vnrelenting paines do neuer cease ;
 But alwayes watch vpon his weakenes keepe)
 That neuer any Sabaoth of releafe
 Could free his trauailes, and afflictions deepe :
 But still his cares held working, all his life,
 Till Death concludes a final end with strife.

84

Whose Herald, Sickenes, being employd, before,
 With full commission to denounce his end ;
 And paine and grieve, inforcing more and more,
 Besieg'd the Hold, that could not long defend ;
 Consuming so, al that resisting store
 Of those prouisions Nature daign'd to lend,

St. 83, ll. 1, 2, 'But now the king retires him to his' ;
 A peace . . . feeble' :

l. 3, 'Wherein his working paines' : l. 4, 'Though seeming rest his closed
 eyes doth' : l. 5, 'For & no peace could euer so' : l. 6, 'His intricate
 turmoiles and sorowes' : l. 7, ' . . . that . . . kept waking' : l. 8,
 'Continue on till Death conclude the strife' .

St. 84, l. 1, 'sent' : l. 5, 'And so consum'd . . . imboldning' : l. 6,
 ' . . . hote gaine-striuing bloud that did contend' .

As that the walles, worne thin, permit the Minde
To looke out thorow, and his frailty finde.

85

For, now (as if those vapors vanisht were,
Which heat of boyling bloud, and health, did breed,
To clowd the iudgement) things do plaine appeare
In their owne colours, as they are indeede ;
When-as th'illightned soule discouers cleere
Th'abusing shewes of Sense, and notes with heed
How poore a thing is pride ; when all, as flaues,
“ Differ but in their fettters, not their Graues.

86

And, lying on his last afflicted bed,
Pale Death and Conscience both before him stand ;
Th'one holding out a Booke, wherein he read
In bloody lines the deedes of his owne hand :
The other shewes a glasse, which figured
An ougly forme of soule corrupted Sand ;
Both bringing horror in the hiest degree,
With what he was, and what he soone should be.

St. 84, ll. 7, 8—

‘ Wearing the wall so thin that now the mind
Might well looke thorow ’ !.

St. 85, l. 1, ‘ Whem lo . . . the ’ !, ²: l. 3, ‘ . . . fence that nothing
might ’ !: l. 4, ‘ Vnto the thought, that which it was ’ !: ll. 5-8—

‘ The lightened soule began to see more cleere
How much it was abusd, & notes with heed
The plaine discouered falsehood open laid
Of all-perwading flesh that so betrayd ’ !.

St. 86, l. 2, ‘ Where ’ !: l. 8, ‘ straight ’ !.

87

Which seeing ; all trembling, and confus'd with feare,
 He lay a while, amaz'd, with this affright :
 At last, commands some, that attending were,
 To fetch the Crowne, and set it in his sight.
 On which, with fixed eye, and heauy cheere,
 Casting a looke ; O God, sayth he, what right
 I had to thee, I now in grieve conceue :
 Thee, which with blood I held, with horror leue.

88

And, herewithall, the soule (rapt with the thought
 Of mischieves past) did so attentive wey
 These present terrors, whil'st (as if forgot)
 The dull oppressed body senselasse lay ;
 That he, as breathlesse quite, quite dead is thought ;
 When, lo, the sonne comes in, and takes-away
 This fatall Crowne from thence, and out he goes ;
 As if impatient, longer time to lose.

St. 87, l. 1, 'all confusd, trembling' : l. 2, ' . . . as ouerthrowne in
 sprite' : l. 7, 'my foule doth now' : l. 8, 'gote' .

After st. 87 (= 119) this comes in 1, * :—

Wert thou the cause my climing care was such
 To passe those boundes, nature and law ordaind ?
 Is this that good which promifed fo much,
 And seemd fo glorious ere it was attaint ?
 ✓ Wherein was never ioye but gaue a touch
 To checke my soule to thinke how thou wert gaind ;
 And now how do I leue thee vnto mine,
 Which it is dread to keepe, death to refigne.'

St. 88, l. 1, 'With this . . . wholy' ; l. 2, 'Of such distresse' :
 l. 3, 'Her present horror' : l. 4, 'confumed' : l. 5, 'And now' :
 l. 8, 'vnwilling'. After st. 88 (= 121) in 1, * come two omitted here :—

122.

And whilst that fad confused soule doth cast
 Those great accounts of terror and distresse,

89

To whom (call'd backe for this presumptuous deed)
The King (return'd from out his extasie)
“ Began : O sonne, what needst thou make such speed
“ To be before-hand with thy miferie ?
“ Thou shalt haue time ynough, if thou succeed,
“ To feele the stormes that beat on Dignitie.
“ And, if thou couldst but bee (be any thing)
“ In libertie, then neuer be a King.

90

“ Nay, Father ; since your Fortune did attaine
So high a Stand, I meane not to descend,

Vpon this counsell it doth light at last
How he might make the charge of horror lesse ;
And finding no way to acquit the past
But onely this, to vse some quicke redreffe
Of acted wrong, with giuing vp againe,
The crowne to whom it seem'd to appertaine.

123.

Which found, lightned with some small ioy shee hyes,
Rouses her seruaunts that dead sleepy lay,
(The members of her house) to exercise
One feeble dutie more, during her stay :
And opening thofe darke windowes, he espies
The crowne for which he lookt was borne awaie :
And all-agrieu'd with the vnkind offence,
He causd him bring it backe that tooke it hence.

St. 89, ll. 1—3—‘ . . . excusing his . . .
By the supposing him departed quite)
He said . . . thee . . . ’ :

l. 4, ‘ Vnto that care, where feare exceeds thy right ’ : ll. 5-8—
‘ And where his sinne whom thou shalt now succeed
Shall still vpbraide thy inheritance of might ;
And if thou canst liue, and liue great from wo
Without this carefull trauaile, let it go ’ !

" Replyes the Prince : as if what you did gaine,
 " I were of spirit vnable to defend.
 " Time will appease them well, who now complaine,
 " And ratifie our int'rest in the end.
 " What wrong hath not continuance quite out-worne ?
 " Yeares make that right, which neuer was so borne.

91

" If so ; God worke his pleasure, sayd the King :
 " Yet thou must needs contend, with all thy might,
 " Such euidence of vertuous deeds to bring,
 " That well may proue our wrong to be our right :
 " And let the goodnesse of the managing
 " Raze out the blot of foul attaining, quite ;
 " That Discontent may all aduantage misse,
 " To wish it otherwife, then now it is.

92

" And since my death my purpose doth preuent,
 " Touching this *Holy warre* I tooke in hand
 " (An action wherewithall my soule had ment
 " T'appease my God, and reconcile my Land)
 " To thee is left to finish my intent ;
 " Who, to be safe, must neuer idly stand ;
 " But some great actions entertaine thou stll,
 " To holde their mindes, who else wil practise ill.

93

" Thou hast not that aduantage by my Raigne,
 " To ryot it, as they whom long descent

St. 91, l. 2, 'And þ do thou' !.
St. 92, l. 2, 'sacred' !.

" Hath purchaf't loue, by custome ; but, with paine
 " Thou must contend to buy the worlds content.
 " What their birth gaue them, thou haft yet to gaine
 " By thine owne vertues, and good gouernment :
 " So that vnesesse thy worth confirme the thing,
 " Thou neuer shalt be father to a King.

94

" Nor art thou borne in those calme dayes, where Rest
 " Hath brought asleepe sluggish Securitie :
 " But, in tumultuous times ; where mindes, addrest
 " To factions, are invr'd to mutinie ;
 " A mischiefe, not by force, to be supprest,
 " Where rigor still begets more enmitie :
 " Hatred must be beguil'd with some new course,
 " Where States are stiffe, and Princes doubt their force.

95

This, and much more, Affliction would haue say'd,
 Out of th'experience of a troublous Raigne
 (For which, his high desire had dearely pay'd
 The int'rest of an euer-toyling paine)
 But that this all-subduing Power here stai'd
 His fault'ring tongue, and paine (r'inforc't againe)
 Barr'd vp th'oppreſſed paſſages of breath,
 To bring him quite vnder the ſtate of Death.¹

¹ Ann. dom. 1412. the K. died in the 46. yeare of his age, when he had raigned 13 yeares 6 moneths ; and left 4 sonnes ; Hen. after him K. The D. of Clarence, Iohn D. of Bedford, and Humfrey D. of Gloster.

St. 93, l. 7, 'And' : l. 8, 'canſt not . . . the'.

St. 95, l. 7, 'And cut off all the'.

96

In whose possession I must leaue him now ;
 And now, into the *Ocean* of new toyles ;
 Into the stormie Maine (where tempestes growe
 Of greater ruines, and of greater spoyles)
 Set foorth my course (to hasten-on my vow)
 Ov'r all the troublous Deepe of these turmoyles,
 And, if I may but liue t'attaine the shore
 Of my desired end, I wish no more.

After st. 96 (= 131, misprinted 113) comes this final one in ¹ here. In ²
 it is st. 139.

132.

' Help on ð sou'raigne *Muse*, helpe on my course,
 If these my toyles be gratefull in thy eyes ;
 Or but looke on, to cheere my feeble force,
 That I faint not in this great enterprize :
 And you ð worthy you, that take remorse
 Of my estate, and helpe my thoughts to rise ;
 Continue still your grace that I may giue,
 End to the worke wherein your worth may liue '¹.

The ende of the fourth Booke.



THE FIFT BOOKE.¹

THE ARGVMENT.

Henry the fift cuts off his enemy,
The Earle of Cambridge, that conspir'd his death.
Henry the sixt (married unluckily)
His, and his Countryes glorie ruineth.
Suffolke, that made the match, preferr'd too hie,
Going to exile, a Pirat murthereth.
VVhat means the Duke of Yorke obseru'd to gaine
The worlds good-will, seeking the Crowne t'attaine.



I

Lose smothered lay the lowe depressed
fire,
Whose after-issuing flames confounded
all,
The whil'st victorious *Henry*² did con-
spire
The wracke of *Fraunce*, that at his
feete did fall :

¹ In ¹ Book 'Fift' is Book 'Fovrth,' and I give various readings from it as in ¹. Heading in ¹ 'The Argvment of the Fovrth Booke.'

² Henry 5. began his raigne the 20 of March. An. 1412.
St. 1, l. 3, 'Whilst thou '.

Whil'ft ioyes of gotten spoyles, and new desire
 Of greater gaine, to greater deeds did call
 His conquerings troupes ; that could no thoughts retaine
 Saue thoughts of glorie, all that actiue Raigne.

2

Whome here, me thinks (as if hee did appeare,
 Out of the clowdy darkenes of the night)
 I do behold approche with Martiall cheere,
 And with a dreadful (and yet louely) sight :
 Whose eye giues courage, and whose brow hath feare ;
 Both representing terror, and delight ;
 And stayes my course, and off my purpose breakes,
 And in vpbrayding words thus fiercely speakes :

3

" Vngrateful times, that impiously neglect
 " That worth, that neuer times againe shall shew ;
 " What ? merites all our toyle no more respect ?
 " Or else standes Idlenesse asharm'd to knowe
 " Those wondrous Actions that do so obiect
 " Blame to the wanton, sinne vnto the flowe ?

St. 1, l. 7, 'Thy' ¹: l. 8, 'But' ¹.

After st. 1 in ¹ is the following stanza in ², ³ :—

' What do I feele o now in paffing by
 These blessed times that I am forst to leauē ?
 What trembling fad remorfe doth terrefie
 M'amazed thought with what I do conceiue ?
 What ? doth my pen commit impietie
 To passe those sacred *tropheis* without leauē ?
 And do I ſin not to salute your ghostes
 Great worthies, ſo renown'd in forraigne coaſts ?'

St. 2, l. 1, 'Who do I fee out of the darke' ¹, ², ³ : l. 2, 'Couered almoſt
 with clowdes as with' ¹ : l. 3, 'That here preſents him with a martiall
 cheere' ¹ : l. 4, 'Seeming of dreadfull, and yet louely fight?' ¹ : l. 8,
 'obraiding wordes' ¹.

"Can *England* see the best, that she can boast,
 "Lie thus vngrac't, vndeckt and almost lost ?

4

"Why do you seeke for fained *Palladines*
 "(Out of the smoke of idle vanitie)
 "Who may giue glory to the true designes,
 "Of *Bourchier, Talbot, Neuile, Willoughby* ?
 "Why should not you strie to fill vp your lines,
 "With wonders of your owne, with veritie ?
 "T'inflame their ospring with the loue of good,
 "And glorious true examples of their Blood.

5

"What euerlaſting matter here is found,
 "Whence new immortall *Iliads* might proceed !
 "That those, whose happie graces do abound
 "In blessed accents, here may haue to feed
 "Good thoughts ; on no imaginarie ground
 "Of hungry shadowes, which no profite breed ;
 "Whence, musicke-like, instant delight may growe ;
 "Yet, when men all do knowe, they nothing knowe.

6

"And why doſt thou, in lamentable verſe,
 "Nothing but blood-fled, treafons, finne and shame,
 "The worſt of times, th'extreame of ills, rehearſe ;
 "To rayſe olde ſtaynes, and to renew dead blame ?
 "As if the mindes of th'euill, and peruerſe,
 "Were not farre fooner trained from the fame,
 "By good example of faire vertuous acts,
 "Then by the ſhew of foul vngodly facts.

St. 5, l. 1, 'O what eternall' 1.

7

"Would God, our times had had some sacred wight,
 "Whose words as happy as our swords had bin,
 "To haue prepar'd for vs *Tropheis* aright,
 "Of vndecaying frames thau'e rested in ;
 "Triumphant Arks, of perdurable might ;
 "O holy lines ! that such aduantage win
 "Vpon the Sieth of Time, in spight of yeares :
 "How blessed they, who gaine what neuer weare !

8 .

"For, what is it to do, if what we do
 "Shall perish neere as foone as it is donne ?
 "What is that glory wee attaine vnto
 "With all our toyle, if lost as foone as wonne ?
 "A small requitall, for so great adoo,
 "Is this poore present breath, a smoake soone gone ;
 "Or these dumb stones, erected for our sake :
 "Which, formless heapes few stormy changes make.

9

"Tell great *ELIZA* (since her dayes are grac't,
 "With those bright ornaments, to vs deni'd)
 "That she repaire what darknesse hath defac't,
 "And get our ruyn'd deedes, reedifi'd :
 "She in whose all-directing eye is plac't
 "A powre, the highest powers of wit to guide
 "Shee may command the worke, and ouer-fee
 "The holy frame, that might eternall bee.

St. 7, l. 1, 'O that'!. St. 8, l. 1, '6'!: l. 5, 'O'!.

10

For, would Shee be content, that Time should make
 A rauenous prey, vpon her glorious Raigne ;
 That Darkenesse, and the Night, should ouertake
 So cleare a Brightnesse, shining without staine ?
 Ah ! no : She fosters some (no doubt) that wake
 For her eternitie, with pleasing paine.
 And if shee, for her selfe, prepare this good ;
 Let her not so neglect those of her Blood.

11

This, that great Monarch, *Henrie*, seem'd to craue ;
 When (weighing what a holy motiue here
 Vertue propof'd, and fit for him to haue,
 Whom all times ought of dutie hold most deare)
 I figh't, and wish't that some would take t'ingraue,
 With curious hand, so proud a worke to reare
 (To grace the present, and to blesse times past)
 That might, for euer, to our glorie last.

12

So should our well-taught times haue learn'd alike,
 How faire shin'd Virtue, and how foul Vice stood ;
 When now my selfe am driuen to mislike
 Those deedes of worth, I dare not vow for good :
 I cannot mone who lose, nor prayse who feeke
 By mightie Actions here t'aduance their Blood,
 I must say, Who wrought most, least honor had :
 How euer good the Cause, the deedes were bad.

St. 10, l. 1, 'O' : l. 8, 'O let her not neglect' .
 St. 12, l. 3, 'haue' ¹ (bad).

13

And onely tell the worst of euerie Raigne ;
 And not the intermedled good report.
 I leave, what glorie Virtue did attaine
 At th'euer memorable *Agincont* :
 I leave to tell, what wit, what power did gaine
 Th'affisieged *Roan, Caen, Dreux* ; or in what sort :
 How Maiestie, with terror, did aduance
 Her conquering foote, on all subdued *Fraunce*.

14

All this I passe, and that magnanimous King,
 Mirror of vertue, miracle of worth ;
 Whose mighty Actions, with wise managing,
 Forc't prouder boasting Climes to serue the North.
 The best of all the best, the earth can bring,
 Scarce equals him, in what his Raigne brought foorth ;
 Being of a minde, as forward to aspire,
 As fit to gourne what he did desire.

15

His comely body was a goodly feate,
 Where Virtue dwelt most faire ; as lodg'd most pure :
 A body strong ; where vse of strength did get
 A stronger state to do, and to endure :
 His life he makes th'example, to beget
 Like spirit in those, he did to good inure ;
 And gaue, to *Worth*, such life, and liuelihood,
 As if hee Greatnes fought, but to do good.

St. 15, l. 7, 'Most gloryng to aduaunce true vertuous bloud ' ¹, ², ³.

16

Hee as the Chiefe, and all-directing head,
 Did with his subiects, as his members, liue ;
 And them to goodnesse forced not, but led ;
 Winning, not much to haue, but much to giue
 (Deeming, the powre of his, his powr did spread)
 As borne to blesse the world, and not to grieue ;
 Adorn'd with others spoyles, not subiects store :
 No King, exacting lesse ; none, winning more.

17

Hee, after that corrupted faith had bred
 An ill inur'd obedience for Command ;
 And languishing luxuriousnes had spred
 Weyward vnaptnesse ouer all the Land ;
 Those long vnordred troupes so marshalled,
 Vnder such formall discipline to stand,
 That euen his soule seem'd onely to direct
 So great a body, such exployts t'effect.

18

He brings abrode distracted Discontent ;
 Disperst ill humors into actions hie ;
 And, to vnite them all in one consent,
 Plac't the faire marke of glorie in their eye ;
 That, Malice had no leasure to dissent,
 Nor Enuie time to practise treacherie :
 The present actions do diuert the thought
 Of madnesse past, while mindes were so well wrought.

St. 16, l. 1, 'Who', 2, '.

St. 17, l. 4, 'Feeble': l. 5, 'Yet he . . . led'.

19

Here now were Pride, Oppression, Vsurie
 (The canker-eating mischieves of the State)
 Call'd foorth to prey vpon the enemie ;
 Whil'st the home-burth'ned, better lightned fate :
 Exactors did not, with a greedy eye,
 Examine states, or priuate riches rate :
 The silent Courts¹ warr'd not, with busie words ;
 Nor wrested law gauē the contentious, swords.

20

Now, nothing entertaines th'attentive eare,
 But stratagems, assaults, surprises, fightes ;
 How to giue lawes to them that conquered were,
 How to articulate with yeelding wightes :
 The weake with mercie, and the proud with feare,
 How to retaine ; to giue deserts their rights,
 Were now the Artes : and nothing else was thought,
 But how to win, and maintaine what was got.

21

Nor here were any priuately posseſt
 Or held alone imprisoned Maiestie,
 Proudly debarring entraunce from the rest ;
 As if the prey were theirs, by victorie.
 Here, no detractor woundes who merits best ;
 Nor shameless brow cheeres-on impietie.
 Virtue, who all her toyle with zeale had spent,
 Not here, all vnrewarded, fighing went.

¹ The Courtes of Iustice.

St. 19, l. 5, 'Eafe was not suffered' : l. 6, 'T . . . wealthes' !.

St. 21, l. 1, 'Here ô . . . none that' : 'And here were none' ^{2, 3} : l. 2,
 'And' ^{1, 2}.

22

But, here, the equally-respecting eye
 Of Powre, looking alike on like deserts,
 Blessing the good, made others good thereby ;
 More mightie, by the multitude of hearts.
 The field of glorie, vnto all doth lie
 Open alike ; honour, to all imparts.
 So that the onely fashion in request,
 Was, to be good, or good-like, as the rest.

23

So much, ô thou Example, dost effect
 (Being farre a better Maister, then Command¹)
 That, how to do, by doing dost direct,
 And teacheſt others action, by thy hand.
 " Who followes not the course, that kings elect ?
 " When Princes worke, who then wil idle stand ?
 " And, when that dooing good is onely thought
 " Worthy reward ; who will be bad for nought ?

24

And had not th' Earle of *Cambridge*,² with vaine speed
 Vntimely practiz'd for an others right,
 With hope to aduance those of his proper feed
 (On whome the Rule seem'd destined to light)
 The Land had seene none of her owne to bleed,
 During this Raigne, nor no aggreeued sight ;

¹ *Docet tolerare labores ; Non iubet.*

² Richard E. of Cambridge the second sonne to Edmond Langly, Duke of Yorke, maried Anne the daughter of Roger Mortimer Earle of March, descended from Lionell D. of Clarence, the third sonne to K. Ed. 3. by whose right Richard D. of Yorke sonne to this E. of Cambridge, afterwards claymed the Crowne.

St. 24, l. 4, ' yet '¹.

None the least blacknesse interclouded had
So faire a day, nor any eye lookt sad.

25

But now, when *Fraunce* perceiued (from afarre)
The gathering tempest, growing-on from hence,
Ready to fall, threatning their State to marre,
They labour all meanes to prouide defence :
And, practising how to preuent this warre,
And shut-out such calamities from thence,
Do foster, here, some discord lately growne ;
To hold Ambition busied, with her owne.

26

Finding those humors which they saw were fit
Soone to be wrought, and easie to be fed,
Swolne full with enuie, that the Crowne should sitt
There where it did (as if established)
And whom it toucht in Blood, to grieue at it ;
They with such hopes and helps sollicited,
That this great Earle was drawne t'attempt the thing,
And practiseth how to depose the King.¹

27

For, being of mightie meanes to do the deed ;
And yet of mightier hopes, then meanes to do :
And yet of spirit, that did his hopes exceed ;
And then of Blood as great, to adde thereto :
All these, with what the gold of *France* could breed
(Being powers enow a clyming minde to woo)
He so employ'd, that many he had wonne,
Euen of the chiefe the King reli'd vpon.

¹ The E. of Câbridge conspiring the death of the King, was with Hen. Scroope Lord Treasurer, & Sir Thomas Gray executed at Southampton. Ann. 3. Reg.

St. 26, l. 8, 'practises' ¹.

28

The well-knowne right of th' Earle of *March* allur'd
 A leaning loue : whose Cause he did pretend.
 Whereby, he knew that so himselfe procur'd
 The Crowne for his owne children, in the ende.
 For, the Earle beeing (as hee was assur'd)
 Vnapt for issue, it must needes descend
 On those of his, being next of *Clarence* race ;
 As who, by course of right, should hold the place.

29

It was the time, when-as the forward Prince
 Had all prepar'd for his great enterprize ;
 And ready stand his troupes to part from hence,¹
 And all in stately forme and order lyes,
 When open Fame giues out intelligence
 Of these bad complots of his enemies :
 Or else, this time (of purpose) chofen is ;
 Though knowne before ; yet let run-on, till this.

30

That this might yeeld the more to aggrauate
 Vpon so foul a deed vntimely fought,
 Now at this point, t'attempt to ruinate
 So glorious a designe so forward brought,
 Whil'ft careful Virtue seekes t'aduance the State,
 And for her euerlasting honor fought :
 That though the Caufe seem'd right, and title strong ;
 The time of dooing it, yet makes it wrong.

¹ At Southampton.
 St. 30, l. 6, query 'fought' ? but sic in ¹, ², ³ and our text : l. 7, 'were' ¹.
 St. 31, l. 1, 'And' ¹, ², ³.

31

But, straight, an vnlameted death he had :
 And straight were ioyfully the Anchors weighd :
 And all flocke fast aboard, with visage glad ;
 As if the sacrifice had nowe beene payd,
 For their good speed ; that made their stay so sad,
 Loathing the least occasion that delayd.
 And, now, new thoughts, great hopes, calme seas, fair
 windes,
 With present action intertwaine their mindes.

32

No other crosse, ô *Henry*, saw thy dayes
 But this, that toucht thy now possessed hold ;
 Nor after, long, till this mans sonne assayes¹
 To get, of thine, the right that he controll'd :
 For which, contending long, his life he payes.
 So that, it fatal seem'd the father should
 Thy winning seeke to stay, and then his sonne
 Should be the cause to lose, when thou hadst won.

33

Yet now in this so happy a meane-while,
 And interlightning times, thy Virtues wrought,
 That Discord had no leafure to defile
 So faire attempts with a tumultuous thought :
 And euen thy selfe, thy selfe didst so beguile
 With such attention vpon what was sought,
 That time affords not now with feare or hate
 Others to seeke, thee to secure thy State.

¹ Richard, Duke of Yorke, sonne to the E. of Cambridge, by Anne daughter to the Earle of March, made his claime, in 30. yeere of Hen. 6.

34

Or else, how easie had it beene, for thee,
 All the pretendant race t'haue layd full lowe ?
 If thou proceeded hadst with crueltie,
 Not suffering any fatall branch to growe :
 But vnsuspicious Magnanimitie
 Shames such effectes of feare, and force, to showe ;
 Busied in free and open Actions still
 Being great : for, being good, hates to be ill.

35

And yet, such wrongs are held meete to be done,
 And often for the State thought requisite :
 As, when the publike good depends thereon,
 When great iniustice is esteem'd great right :
 But yet, what good with doing ill is won ?
 Who hath of blood made such a benefite,
 As hath not fear'd, more after then before,
 And made his peace the lesse, his plague the more ?

St. 34, l. 1, 'Else ô !'

After st. 34 (- 35) comes the following in 1, 2, 3 :—

' Which ô how much it were to be requir'd,
 In all of might, if all were like of mind ;
 But when that all depraued haue confir'd
 To be vniust, what fastie shall they find
 (After the date of vertue is expird)
 That do not practize in the selfe-fame kind,
 And countermine against deceite with guile ?
 But ô what mischiefe feelest the world the while ? '

(in 2, 3, l. 1, 'Which how much were it to be still' : l. 8, 'yet').

St. 35, l. 4, 'most' (bis) : l. 5, 'ô !'

36

Farre otherwise dealt this vndaunted King,
 That cherisched the ofspring of his foes ;
 And his Competitors to grace did bring :
 And them, his friendes for Armes, and honors, chose ;
 As if plaine courses were the safest thing ;
 Where vpright goodnesse, sure, and stedfast goes,
 Free from that subtile maskt impietie,
 Which this depraued world calles policie.

37

Yet, how hath Fate dispol'd of all this good ?
 What haue these Virtues after times auail'd ?
 In what stead hath hy-raised Valour stood,
 When this continuing cause of Greatnes fail'd ?
 Then, when proud-growne, the irritated blood,
 Enduring not it selfe, it selfe assail'd ;
 As though that *Prowesse* had but leard to spill
 Much blood abrode, to cut her throat with skill.

38

How doth th'Eternall, in the course of things,
 Immix the causes both of Good and Ill ?
 That thus the one, effects of th'other brings :
 As what seemes made to blisse, is borne to spill ?
 What ? from the best of Virtues glorie, springs
 That, which the world with miserie doth fill ?
 Is th'end of happinesse, but wretchednesse ?
 Hath Sinne his plague, and Virtue no successe ?

St. 38, l. 1, 'O' : l. 2, 'So mixe'.

39

✓ Either that is not good, the world holdes good :
 Or else is so confus'd with ill ; that we
 (Abused with th'appearing likelihood)
 Run to offend, whil'st we thinke good to bee :
 Or else the heauens made man (in furious blood)
 To torture man ; Allotting no course free
 From mischiefe long : Sending faire dayes that breed
 But stormes ; to make, more foul, times that succeed.

40

Who would haue thought, that so great victories,
 Such conquests, riches, Land, and Kingdome gain'd,
 Could not but haue establisht in such wise
 This powrefull State, in state to haue remain'd ?
 Who would haue thought, that Mischief could deuise
 A way, so foone to lose what was attain'd ?
 As if powre were but shew'd to grieue, not grace ;
 And to reduce vs into farre worse case.

41

With what contagion, *Fraunce*, didst thou infect
 This Land, by thee made proud, to disagree ;
 T'inrage them so, their owne fwordes to direct
 Vpon them-selues, that were made sharp in thee ?
 Why didst thou teach them, here at home t'erect
Trophees of their blood, which of thine should bee ?
 Or was the date of thine affliction out,
 And so (by course) was ours to come about ?

St. 39, l. 6, ' . . . And that no course is free ' ¹ : l. 7, ' . . . And that
 faire daies do ' ¹.

St. 40, l. 7, ' As greatness ' ¹.

42

But, that vntimely death of this great King.¹
 Whose nine yeeres Raigne so mightie wonders wrought,
 To thee thy hopes, to vs despaire did bring ;
 Not long to keepe, and gourne, what was got :
 For, those that had th'affayres in managing,
 Although their Countries good they greatly sought ;
 Yet, so ill accidentes vnfitly fell,
 That their dessignes could hardly prosper wel.

43

An infant King doth in the State succeed,²
 Scarce one yeere old ; left vnto others guide :
 Whose careful trust, though such as shew'd indeed,
 They weigh'd their charge more then the world besyde,
 And did with dutie, zeale, and loue proceed ;
 Yet (for all what their trauaile could prouide)
 Could not woo Fortune, to remaine with vs,
 When this her Minion was departed thus :

44

But, by degrees first this, then that, regain'd,
 The turning tide beares backe, with flowing chaunce
 Vnto the Dolphin, all we had attain'd,
 And filles the late lowe-running hopes of *Fraunce* ;
 When *Bedford* (who our onely hold maintain'd)
 Death takes from vs, their fortune to aduance :
 And then home-strife (that on it selfe did fall)
 Neglecyng forraine care, did foone lose all.

¹ Hen. 5. raigned 9. yeares and ten moneths, and died in the 36 yeare of his age.

² Hen. 6. scarce one yeere old when hee began his raigne, was committed o the charge of the two good Dukes, Bedford and Gloster his Uncles.

45

Neere three score yeeres are past since *Bullingbrooke*
 Did first attaine (God knows how iust) the Crowne :
 And now his race, for right possessors tooke,
 Were held of all, to hold nougnt but their owne :
 When *Richard, Duke of Yorke*, begins to looke
 Into their right, and makes his title knowne ;
 Wakening-vp sleeping Right (that lay as dead)
 To witnesse, how his race was iniured.

46

His fathers end, in him, no feare could moue
 T'attempt the like, against the like of might ;
 Where long possession now of feare, and loue,
 Seem'd to prescribe euen an innated Right.
 So that, to proue his state, was to disproue
 Time, law, consent, oath, and allegiance quight :
 And no way, but the way of blood there was,
 Through which, with all confusion hee must passe.

47

And how much better for him, had it beene,
 T'indure a wrong with peace, then with such toyle
 " T'obtaine a bloody Right ? since Right is finne,
 " That is ill fought, and purchased with spoyle.
 But, this so wretched state are Kingdomes in,
 Where one mans Cause, shall all the rest imbroyle :
 And oft, t'aduance a Tyran to a Crowne,
 Men run t'vndoo the State, that is their owne.

St. 45, l. 7, 'Wrong' 1.

St. 47, l. 1, 'O then' 1 : ll. 5-8—

' What madnes vncstrained to begin
 To right his state, to put the State in broyle ?
 Iustice her selfe maie euen do wrong in this,
 No war be'ing right but that which needful is.'

48

And yet that opportunitie, which led
 Him to attempt, feemes likewise him t'excuse :
 A feeble spirited King that gouerned,
 (Who ill could guide the Scepter he did vse)
 His enemies (that his worth maliced ;
 Who, both the Land, and him, did much abuse)
 The peoples loue, and his apparent Right,
 May seeme sufficient motiues to incite.

49

* Besides ; the now ripe wrath (deferd till now)
 Of that sure and vnfayling *Iusticer*,
 That neuer suffers wrong so long to growe,
 And to incorporate with right so farre,
 As it might come to seeme the same in shewe
 (T'incourage those that euill minded are
 By such successe) but that at last he will
 Confound the branch, whose root was planted ill.

50

Else, might the impious say (with grudging Ispight)
 Doth God permit the Great to riot free,
 And blesse the mightie though they do vnright,
 As if he did unto their wrongs agree ?
 And onely plague the weake and wretched wight,
 For smallest faults, euen in the high'ſt degree ?
 When he, but vſing them for others scourge,
 Likewife of them at lēngth the world doth purge.

St. 48, l. 4, 'Vnworthy of the' !.

St. 49, l. 3, misprinted 'neuers' in our text.

St. 50, l. 5, 'wights' (misprint) !.

51

But could not yet, for blood-shed, satisfie
 The now well-ruling of th'ill-gotten Crowne ?
 Must euen the good receiue the penaltie
 Of former finnes, that neuer were their owne ?
 And must a iust King's blood, with miserie
 Pay for a bad, vniustly ouerthrowne ?
 Well ; then wee see, Right in his course must goe :
 And men, t'escape from blood, must keepe it so.

X

52

And, sure, this King, that now the Crowne possest
(Henrie the sixt) was one, whose life was free
 From that command of vice, whereto the rest
 Of most these mightie Soueraignes subiects bee ;
 And numbred might haue beene, among the best
 Of other men, if not of that degree :
 A right good man, but yet an euill King ;
 Vnfit for what hee had in managing.

53

Of humble spirite, of nature continent :
 No thought t'increase he had ; scarce keep his owne :
 For pard'ning apter, then for punishment,
 He chokes his powre, to haue his bountie knowne.
 Farre from reuenge, soone wonne, soone made content ;
 As fitter for a Cloyster then a Crowne :
 Whose holy minde so much addicted is
 On th'world to-come, that he neglecteth this.

St. 51, l. 1, '6'': l. 7, 'Then ô I due course must rightly'': l. 8, 'And th'earth must trace it or else purchase woe'.

St. 52, l. 4, 'Of many mighty'.

St. 53, l. 1, 'Mild, meeke a spirite, by . . . patient' ; in ², l. 1, 'Humble of spirit, by nature patient' : l. 3, 'Apter for pardoning' ; l. 4, 'seeking his bounty not his powre t'haue' ^{1, 2, 3}.

54

With fuch a weake-good, feeble-godly King,
 Hath *Richard, Duke of Yorke*, his Cause to trie :
 Who, by th'experience of long managing
 The warres of *Fraunce*, with supreame dignitie ;
 And by his owne great worth, with furthering
 The common good against the enemie,
 Had wrought, that zeale and loue attend his might,
 And made his spirit equall vnto his Right.

55

For, now the *Duke of Bedford* beeing dead,
 He is ordain'd the Regent to succeed
 In *Fraunce*,¹ for fие yeeres : where, he trauayled
 With ready hand, and with as carefull heed,
 To seeke to turne backe Fortune (that now fled)
 And hold vp falling Power, in time of need :
 And got and lost, and reattaines (againe)
 That which againe was lost, for all his paine.

56

His time expir'd, he should for fие yeeres more
 Haue had his charge prolong'd : but *Sommerset*,²
 (That still had enui'd his command before)
 That place, and honor, for himselfe did get :
 Which ads that matter to th'already store
 Of kindled hate, which such a fire doth fet
 Vnto the touch of a confounding flame,
 As both their bloods could neuer quench the same.

¹ The D. of Yorke made Regent in Fraunce, after the death of the D. of Bedf.

² Edmond, Duke of Sommerset, a great enemie of the Duke of Yorke.

57

And now the weakenesse of that feeble Head
 (That doth neglect all care, but his soules care)
 So easie meanes of practice ministred,
 Vnto th'ambitious members, to prepare
 Their owne defires, to what their humors led ;
 That all good actions coldly followed are,
 And sev'rall-tending hopes do wholly bend
 To other now, then to the publique end.

58

And, to draw on more speedy miserie,
 The King vnto a fatall match is led
 With *Rayners*¹ daughter, King of *Sicilie* ;
 Whom, with vnlucky starres, he married :
 For, by the meanes of this affinitie,
 Was lost all that his father conquered ;
 Euen as if *France* had some *Erynnis* sent
 T'auenge their wrongs, done by the insolent.

59

This marriage was the Earle of *Suffolkes*² deed,
 With great rewardes won to effect the same :
 Which made him that hee tooke so little heed
 Vnto his Countries good, or his owne shame :
 It beeing a match could stand vs in no steed
 For strength, for wealth, for reputation, fame :

¹ This Rayner was Duke of Aniou, and onely enjoyed the title of the K. of Sicilia.

² William de la Pole E. of Suffolke, after created D. of Suff. the chiefest instrumēt in this mariage : which was solemnized, An. Reg. 23. betweene the King & the Lady Margaret, daughter to Rayner D. of Aniou ; to whom was deliuered vp the Duchy of Aniou, & the Conty of Maine, vpon the conclusion of this match.

But cunningly contriv'd for others gaine ;
And cost vs more, then *Aniou, Mauns, and Maine.*

60

And yet (as if he had accomplished
Some mightie benefit vnto the Land)
He got his trauailes to be registred
In Parlement, for euermore to stand
A witnes to approue all what he did :
To th'end, that, if hereafter it were scand,
Authoritie might yet be on his fide ;
As doing nought but what was ratifi'd :

61

Imagining, th'allowance of that Place
Would make that good, the which he knew was naught;
And so would his negotiation grace,
As none might think it was his priuate fault.
Wherein, though wit dealt wary in this case ;
Yet, in the end, it selfe it ouer-raught
Striuing to hide, he opened it the more ;
His after-care, shewd craft had gone before.

62

Deare didst thou buy, o King, so faire a Wife,
So rare a spirit, so high a minde, the-while :
Whose portion was destruction ; dowry, strife :
Whose bed was sorrow ; whose embracing, spoyle :
Whose maintenance cost thee and thine, their life ;
And whose best comfort, neuer was but toyle.
What *Paris* brought this booty of desire,
To set our mightie *Ilium* here on fire ?

St. 59, l. 7, 'contrived . . . their' !.

63

I grieue, I shold be forc't to say thus much,
 To blame her, whom I yet must wonder at ;
 Whose so sweete beautie, wit, and worth, were such,
 As (though she Fortune lost) she glory gat :
 Yet doth my Countries zeale so neerely touch,
 That here my Muse it doth exasperate ;
 Although vnwilling, that my pen should giue
 Staine to that sex, by whom her fame doth liue.

64

For, sure, those virtues well deserv'd a Crowne.
 And, had it not beene ours, no doubt she might
 Haue beene among the Worthies of renowne,
 And now sat faire with fame, with glorie bright :
 But, comming in the way where sinne was growne
 So foule and thicke, it was her chaunce to light
 Amidst the grosse infection of those times ;
 And so came stain'd with black disgrace-full crimes.

65

For, some the world must haue, on whom to lay
 The heauie burthen of reproche and blame ;
 Against whose deedes, th'afflicted may inuay,
 As th'onely Authors, whence destruction came :
 When yet, perhaps, 'twas not in them to stay
 The current of that streme, nor help the same ;
 But, liuing in the eye of Action so,
 Not hindring it, are thought to draw-on wo.

St. 63, l. 1, 'that I am forst' ¹: l. 4, 'As euerlasting admiration gat' ¹ :
 l. 6, 'That I am drawne to say I know not what' ¹ : l. 7, 'And yet ô that
 my pen should euer' ¹.

St. 64, l. 3, 'Haue matcht the worthiest that the world hath knowne'

St. 65, l. 1, 'And' ^{1, 2}

66

So much vnhappy do the Mightie stand,
 Who stand on other then their owne defence,
 When-as destruction is so neere at hand,
 That if by weakenesse, folly, negligence,
 They do not coming miserie withstand,
 They shall be deemed th'authors of th'offence,
 And to call in, that which they kept not out ;
 And curst, as they who brought th'ose plagues about.

67

And so remaine for euer rigistred
 In that eternall booke of Infamie ;
 When yet how many other causes led
 As well to that, as their iniquitie ?
 The worst complots oft lie close smothered :
 And well-meant deedes fall out vnluckily ;
 Whil'st the aggrieu'd stand not to waigh th'intent ;
 But euer iudge according to th'euent.

68

I say not this t'excuse thy Sinne, ô *Queene*,¹
 Nor cleare their faults who mightie Actors are :
 I cannot but affirme, thy pride hath been
 A speciall meanes this Common-wealthe to marre :
 And that thy weyward will was plainly seene,
 In vaine ambition, to presume too farre ;
 And that, by thee, the onely way was wrought
 The Duke of *Gloster* to his death was brought :

¹ The pride and hautinessse of this Queene Margaret gaue the first originall to the mischies that followed by the death of Humfrey Duke of Gloster Protector.

St. 66, l. 6, 'thought' : l. 8, 'thoſe that' !.

St. 67, l. 3, 'ô' !.

69

A man, though seeming in thy thought to fit
 Betweene the light of thy desires and thee ;
 Yet did his taking thence plainly permit
 Others to looke to that they could not see
 During his life, nor would aduenture it :
 When his Remoue quite made the passage free ;
 That, by his fall, thinking to stand alone,
 Thou scarce could'st stand at all, when he was gone.

70

For, this *Duke* (as *Protector*) many yeeres,
 Had rul'd the Land, during the Kings young age ;
 And now the selfe same charge and title beares,
 As if hee still were in his pupillage :
 Which, such disgrace vnto the Queene appeares,
 That (all incenst, with an ambitious rage)
 Shee doth conspire to haue him made-away ;
 As one, that stayd the Current of her sway :

71

Thrust thereinto, not onely with her pride ;
 But, by her fathers counsell and consent :
 Who griev'd likewise, that any one beside,
 Should haue the honor of the gouernment :
 And, therefore, he such deepe aduice applid,
 As forraine craft and cunning could inuent,
 To circumuent an vnsuspecting wight,
 Before he should discerne of their despight.

St. 70, l. 8, 'As who the course of her maine will doth staie' !.

72

And many ready hands shee straight doth finde,
 To ayde her deed, of such as could not brooke
 The length of one mans office, in that kind ;
 Who, all th'espaciall Charges vnder-tooke,
 Rul'd all, himselfe : and neuer had the minde
 T'impairt a part with others ; who would looke
 To haue likewise some honor in their hands,
 And griev'd at such ingrossing of Commands.

73

For, had he not had such a greedy loue
 To intertaine his Offices too long,¹
 Enuie had beene vnable to reproue
 His acted life, vnles shee did him wrong :
 But, hauing liv'd, so many yeeres, aboue,
 He grieues now to descend, to be lesse strong,
 And kils that fame that virtue did beget ;
 Chose to be held lesse good, then seene lesse great.

74

" For, could the mightie but giue bounds to pride,
 " And weigh-backe Fortune, ere shee pull Them downe ;
 " Contented with inough, with honors satisfid,
 " Not striuing how to make so much their owne,
 " As to leauue nothing for the rest beside ;
 " Who seeme by their high-spreading ouer-growne
 " (Whil'st they themselues remaine in all mens ficht,
 " The odious marke of hatred and despight)

¹ *Nil tam utile, quam breuem potestatem esse que magna sit.*

St. 72, l. 4, 'That to himselfe th'affaires all wholly'^{1, 2, 3}: l. 5, 'And ruling all had neuer any'^{1, 2, 3}: l. 6, 'that'^{1, 2, 3}.

St. 73, l. 1, 'And'^{1, 2, 3}: l. 2, 'Of still continuing of his charge'¹: l. 4, 'without'¹.

St. 74, l. 1, , O , !.

75

" Then neuer should so many tragedies
 " Burthen our knowledge, with their bloody end :
 " Nor their disgrac't confounded families,
 " From so high pride, to so lowe shame descend ;
 " But, planted on that ground where safetie lyes,
 " Their braunches should to eternitie extend :
 " But euer, they, who ouer-looke so much,
 " Will ouer-see themselues ; their state is such.

76

Seuere he was, and strightly did obserue
 Due forme of Iustice towards euery wight ;
 Vnmoueable, and neuer won to fwerue
 For any cause, in what he thought was right¹ :
 Wherin, although he did so well deserue ;
 In the licentious, yet, it bred despight :
 " So that euen Virtue seemes an Actor too,
 " To ruine those, Fortune prepares t'vndoo.

77

Now, such, being forward, who (the Queene well knewe)
 Hated his might, and glad to innouate ;
 Vnto so great, and strong a partie grew,
 As it was easie to subuert his State :
 And onely hope of alteration drew
 Many to yeld, that had no cause to hate.
 " For, euen with goodnesse men growe discontent,
 " Where States are ripe to fall, and virtue spent.

¹ The Virtues of Humfrey D. Gloucester.

St. 75, l. 1, 'Then shold not þ'': l. 7, 'thoſe that': l. 8, 'Muſt'.

St. 77, l. 1, 'Thoſe, thus prouided which': l. 4, 'As easie twas to ouerthrow'.

78

And, taking all the Rule into her hand
 (Vnder the shadow of that feeble King)
 The Duke sh'excludes from Office and Command,
 And in the reach of enmitie doth bring,
 From that respected height where he did stand
 (When malice scarce durst mutter any thing) :
 And now the worst of him comes all reueal'd,
 Which former feare, or rigor kept conceal'd.

79

Now is he taxèd, that he rather sought
 His priuate profit, then the publique good ;
 And many things presumptuously had wrought ;
 Other, then with our lawes, and customes stood :
 As one, that would into the Land haue brought
 The Ciuile forme, in cases touching blood ;
 And such poore Crimes : that shew'd, their spight was
 But yet bewrayde, their matter wanted ground. [soud ;

80

Yet serv'd they well the turne, and did effect
 That which is easie wrought in such a case :
 Where, what suborned *Inſtice* shal obiect,
 Is to the purpose, and must passe with grace ;
 And what the wretched bring, of no effect :
 Whose haynous faultes his matter must deface.
 “ For, where Powre hath decreed to finde th'offence,
 “ The Cause is better still, then the defence.

St. 78. L 7, ‘ When straight ’ .

81

A Parlement, at *Berry* summoned,
 Dispatcht the deed, more speedily then well.
 For, thither came the *Duke* without all dread,
 Or ought imagining of what befell :
 Where, now the matter is so followed,
 That he conuented is, ere he could tell
 He was in danger, or had done offence ;
 And presently to prison sent, from thence.¹

82

Which quicke, and sodaine action gaue no time
 For men to waigh the iustice of the deed ;
 Whil'it looking onely on the vrged crime,
 Vnto the farther drift they take no heed.
 For, these occasions taken in the prime
 Of courses new, that old dislikes succeed,
 Leave not behind that feeling touch of wrong :
 Satietie makes passions still lesse strong.

83

And yet they seem'd some mutinie to doubt,
 For thus proceeding with a man of might ;
 Confid'ring hee was popular and stout,
 And resolute would stand upon his Right :
 And therefore did they cast this way about,
 To haue him closely murdred out of sight ;

¹ The D. of Glocester comming to this Parlement from his Castle of the Viez in Wiltshire, was arrested by Iohn L. Beaumont high Conftable, the Dukes of Buckingham and Somerfet, with others ; who appointed certaine of the Kings houſhold to attend vpon him : but he died before he was brought to his anſwere, ſome ſay of sorrow, others of a Palfie, or an Impouſtume, An. Reg. 25. The D. of Suffolke was a principall instrument in this bufineſſe.

St. 81, l. 5, 'Whereas' ¹.

That so, his trouble, and his death hereby,
Might come togither, and togither die :

84

Reckning it better, since his end is ment,
And must be wrought, at once to rid it cleere,
And put it to the fortune of th'euent ;
Then by long doing, to be long in feare :
When, in such courses of high punishment,
The deed, and the attempt, like daunger beare :
And oft, things done (perhaps) do lesse annoy,
Then may the doing, handled with delay.

85

And, so, they had it straight accomplished.
For, next day after his commitment, he
Is dead brought forth ; being found so in his bed :
Which was by sodaine sickenesse sayd to bee,
That had vpon his sorrowes newly bred ;
As by apparant tokens men might see.
And thus & *Sickenesse*, thou art oft beli'd ;
When death hath many wayes to come, beside.

86

Are these the deedes, high forraine wittes inuent ?
Is this that Wisedome whereof they so boast ?
Well ; then I would it neuer had beene spent
Heere, amongst vs, nor brought from out their coast :
Let their vile cunning, in their limits pent,
Remaine amongst themselues, that like it most :
And let the *North* (they count of colder blood)
Be held more grosse, so it remaine more good.

St. 83, l. 1, ' Seeing he was most ' .

St. 85, l. 5, ' gathered ' . St. 86, l. 3, ' O ' .

87

Let them haue fairer citties, goodlier foyles,
 And sweeter fieldes, for beautie to the eye,
 So long as they haue these vngodly wyles,
 Such detestable vile impietie :
 And let vs want their Vines, their Fruites the-whyles,
 So that wee want not fayth and honestie :
 We care not for those pleasures ; so we may
 Haue better hearts, and stronger hands then they.

88

Neptune, keepe-out, from thy imbraced Ile,
 This foul contagion of iniquitie :
 Drowne all corruptions, comming to defile
 Our faire proceedings ordred formally :
 Keepe vs meere English : let not craft beguile
 Honor and Iustice, with strange subteltie :
 Let vs not thinke, how that our good can frame,
 Which ruin'd hath the Authors of the same.

89

But, by this impious meanes, that worthy man
 Is brought vnto this lamentable end,
 And, now, that Current with maine surie ran
 (The stop remov'd, that did the course defend)
 Vnto the full of mischiefe, that began
 T'a vniuersall ruine to extend ;
 That *Isthmus* fayling, which the Land did keep,
 From the intire possession of the Deepe.

90

And now the King, alone, all open lay ;
 No vnder-prop of Blood, to stay him by.
 None, but himselfe stands weakely in the way
 Twixt Yorke, and the affected sov'reignty :
 Gone is that barre, that would haue beene the stay
 T'haue kept him backe, from mounting vp so hie.
 " But see (ah !) see : What state stand these men in,
 " That cannot liue without, nor with their kin ?

91

The Queene hath yet, by this, her full desire ;
 And now she with her Minion, Suffolke, raigns :
 Now she hath all authoritie intire ;
 And all affayres vnto her selfe retains :
 And onely Suffolke is aduaunc'd hier,
 He is the man rewarded, for his pains ;¹
 He, that did her in stead most chiefly stand ;
 And more aduanc't her, then hee did the Land.

92

Which when they saw, who better did expect,
 Then they began their error to descry ;
 And well perceiue, that onely the defect
 Was in their iudgements, passion-drawne awry ;
 Found, formall rigor fitter to direct,
 Then pride and insolent inconstancie.
 " Better feueritie, that's right and iust,
 " Then impotent affections, led with lust.

¹ De la Pole is created D. of Suffolke, Ann. Reg. 26. and is banished, and murthered, the next yeare after.

St. 90, l. 7, 'ð in what a state' !.

93

And thereupon, in sorrow thus complaine ;
 "What wondrous inconuenience do they feele,
 "Where as such imbecillitie doth raigne,
 "As so neglects the care of Common-weale ?
 "Where euer one or other doth obtaine
 "So high a grace thus absolute to deale ;
 "The-whilst th'aggreeued subiect suffers, stil,
 "The pride of some predominating will ?

94

" And euer, one remov'd, a worse succeeds :
 " So that the best, that we can hope, is Warre,
 " Tumults, and stirres, that this disliking breedes :
 " The sword must mend, what Insolence doth marre.
 " For, what rebellions, and what bloody deedes,
 " Haue euer followed, where such courses are ?
 " What oft-remoues ? what death of Counsailers ?
 " What murder ? what exile of Officers ?

95

" Witnesse the *Spencers*, *Gauestone*, and *Vere*,
 " The mighty Minions of our feeblest Kings ;
 " Who euer Subiects to their subiects were,
 " And onely the procurers of these things :
 " When worthy Monarchs, that hold honour deare,
 " Maister themselues, and theirs ; vwhich euer brings
 " That vniersall reurence, and respect :
 " For, who waighes him, that doth himselfe neglect ?

St. 93, l. 2, 'O what great' !.

96

" And yet our case is like to be farre worfe :
 " Hauing a King, though not so bent to ill,
 " Yet fo neglecting good, that giuing force
 " By giuing leave, doth all good order kill ;
 " Suffring a violent Woman take her course,
 " To manage all, according to her will :
 " Which, how she doth begin, her deedes expresse ;
 " And, what will be the end, our felues may ghesse.

97

Which after followed, euen as they did dread,
 When now the shamefull losse of *Fraunce*,¹ much grieues:
 Which vnto *Suffolke* is attributed :
 As who in all mens sight most hatefull liues :
 And is accus'd,² that he (with lucre led)
 Betraies the State, and secret knowledge giues
 Of our desigues ; and, all that we did hold,
 By his corruption, is or lost, or fold.

98

And, as hee deales abroad, so likewise here, .
 He robs at home, the Treasurie no lesse ;
 Here, where he all authoritie doth beare,
 And makes a *Monopoly* of Offices :
 He is inricht, h'is raif'd, and placèd neare ;
 And onely he, giues counfaile to oppresse :

¹ The Duchy of Normandy was lost, in the yeere 1449, after it had been held 30 yeeres conquered by Hen. 5. Ann. Reg. 27.

² Articles obiected against de la Poole, Duke of Suffolke.

St. 97, l. 1, 'Thus well they deem'd what after followed ' ; l. 5, 'He with the enemy confedered ' ; l. 7, 'Of all our strength ; that ' ; St. 98, l. 5, misprinted 'His' in our text.

Thus men obiect,¹ whil'st many, vp in Armes,
Offer to be reuengèd of these harmes.

99

The *Queene*, perciuing in what case she stooode
To lose her Minion, or ingage her State ;
(After with long contention in her blood,
Loue and Ambition, did the Cause debate)
Shee yields to Pride : and rather thought it good,
To sacrifice her Loue vnto their hate ;
Then to aduenture else the losse of all :
Which (by maintaining him) was like to fall.

100

Yet, seeking at the first to temporize,
Shee tries if that some short Imprisonment
Would calme their heat : when that would not suffize,
Then to exile him she must needs consent ;
Hoping, that time would salue it in such wife,
As yet at length they might become content,
And shee againe, might haue him home at last,
When this first furie of their rage was past.

101

But, as he to his iudged exile went,
Hard on the shore he comes incoutered²

¹ At the Parliamēt at Leicester, the lower House besought the K. that such perfons as affested to the rendring of Aniou and Maine, might bee duely punished : of which fact, they accused as principals, the D. of Suffolke, the L. Say, Treasurer of Eng. with others. Wherevpon, the K. to appease the Commons, sequestred them from their offices & rooms : and after, banished the D. for 5 yeeres.

² As the D. vvas layling into France, hee was incoutered with a ship of Warre, appertaining to the D. of Excester : who tooke him, & brought him back to Douer : where his head was striken off, and his body left on the sands. Ann. reg. 27.

By some, that so farre off his Honour sent,
 As put his backe-returne quite out of dread :
 For, there he had his rightfull punishment,
 Though wrongly done ; and there he lost his head :
 Part of his blood hath *Neptune*, part the Sand ;
 As who had mischiefe wrought by sea and land.

102

Whose death, when swift-wingd Fame at full conuaid
 To this disturbed *Queene*, misdoubting nought ;
 Despight, and Sorrow such affliction laid
 Vpon her soule, as wondrous passions wrought.
 " And art thou *Suffolke*, thus, said she, betraide ?
 " And haue my fauours thy destruction brought ?
 " Is this their gaine, whom Highnesse faoureth,
 " Who chiese preferd, stand as preferd to death ?

103

" O fatall grace ! without which, men complaine,
 " And with it perish ; what preuailes that we
 " Must weare the Crowne, and other men must raigne,
 " And cannot stand to be, that which we be ?
 " Must our owne Subiects limit and constraine
 " Our fauours, wher-as they themselues decree ?
 " Must we, our loue, at their appointment, place ?
 " Do we commaund, and they direct our grace ?

St. 102, l. 2, ' Vnto the trauaile' : l. 5, ' O God (faith she) and art thou thus' .

St. 103, l. 3, ' Thus beare the title of a Soueraigne' : l. 4, ' And suffred not' : l. 5, ' O must our' .

104

" Must they our powre, thus from our will, diuide ?
 " And haue wee might, but must not vse our might ?
 " Poore Maiestie, which other men must guide ;
 " Whose discontent can neuer looke aright :
 " For, euer-more wee see those who abide
 " Gracious in ours, are odious in their sight,
 " Who would all-maistring Maiestie defeat
 " Of her best grace ; that is, to make men Great.

St. 104, l. 1, ' O will they then our powre aid ' ; in 2², ' Will they our powre thus from our will deuide ' ; l. 3, ' that ' ; l. 5, ' that ' .

After st. 104 (= 106) come the following :—

107.

Deeré *Suffolke*, & I saw thy wofull cheere
 When thou perceiu'dst no helpe but to depart :
 I saw that looke wherein did plaine appeare
 The lamentable message of thy heart :
 That seemd to say : O *Quene*, and canst thou beare
 My ruine so ? the caufe whereof thou art :
 Canſt thou indure to ſee them worke their will
 And not defend me from the hand of ill ?

108.

Hauē I for thee aduentured ſo much,
 Made ſhipwracke of my honor, faith and fame ?
 And doth my ſervice giue no deeper touch
 To thy hard heart better to feele the fame ?
 Or doſt thou feare, or is thy weakenes ſuch
 As not of force to keepe me from this shame ?
 Or else now hauing ſeru'd thy turne of me,
 Art well-content my ouerthrow to fee ?

109.

As if my ſight did read vnto thy minde
 The lecture of that shame thou wouldſt forget,
 And therefore peraduenture glad to finde
 So fit occation, doſt it forward ſet :
 Or else thy ſelſe from dangerous toile t'vnwinde
 Downe on my necke doſt all the burthen let ;

105

" But, well ; We see, although the King be Head,
 " The State will be the Heart. This Soueraigntie
 " Is but in place, not powre ; and gouerned
 " By th'equall Scepter of *Necessitie*.
 " And we haue feene more Princes ruined,
 " By their imoderat fauouring priuatly,
 " Then by feuerity in generall.
 " For, best h'is lik't, that is alike to all.

106

Thus stormes this Lady, all disquieted ;
 When-as farre greater tumults now burst out :
 Which close and cunningly were practiced,
 By such, as sought great hopes to bring about.
 For, vp in Armes in *Kent* were gathered
 A mighty insolent rebellious rout,
 Vnder a dangerous Head ; who, to deterr
 The State the more, himselfe nam'd *Mortimer*.¹

Since kings must haue some hated worfe then they,
 On whom they may the waight of enuy lay.

110.

No *Suffolke*, none of this, my soule is cleere ;
 Without the thought of such impiety :
 Yet must I needes confess that too much feare
 Made me defend thee lesse courageously :
 Seeing more Princes euer ruined were
 By their immoderate fauoring priuately
 Then by feuerity in generall :
 For best h'is lik't, that is alike to all.

(Cf. ll. 5—8 of st. 110 with st. 105. So ^{2, 3}.)

St. 105, ll. 1—4 not in ¹. St. 106, l. 6, 'That' ¹.

¹ The Commons of Kent assembled theselues in great n̄ber : and had to
 their Capitaine Jack Cade, who named himselfe Mortimer, Cosen to the
 Duke of Yorke : vwith purpose to redresse the abuses of the gouernement.

107

The Duke of Yorke, that did not idle stand
 (But seekes to worke on all aduantages)
 Had likewise in this course a secret hand,
 And hartned on their chieffest complices ;
 To try how here the people of the Land
 Would (if occasion serv'd) b'in readinesse
 To aide that Line, if one should come in deed
 To moue his Right, and in due course proceed ;

108

Knowing himselfe to be the onely one,
 That must attempt the thing, if any should :
 And therefore, lets the Rebell now run-on
 With that false Name, t'effect the best he could ;
 To make a way for him to worke vpon,
 Who but on certaine ground aduenture would.
 For, if the Traitor sped, the gaine were his ;
 If not, yet he stands safe, and blameleffe is.

109

T'attempt' with others dangers, not his owne,
 He counts it wisedome, if it could be wrought :
 And t'haue the humour of the people knowne,
 Was now that, which was chiefly to be fought.
 For, with the best, he knew himselfe was growne
 In such account, as made him take no thought ;
 Hauing observ'd, in those he meant to proue,
 Their wit, their wealth, their cariage, and their loue.

St. 107, l. 5, 'that' !.

110

With whome, and with his owne alliances,
 He first begins to open (in some wise)
 The Right he had ; yet, with such doubtfulnes,
 As rather sorrow, then his drift descryes :
 Complayning of his Countries wretchednes,
 In what a miserable case it lies ;
 And how much it imports them to prouide
 For their defence, against this womans pride.

111

Then, with the discontented he doth deale,
 In sounding theirs, not vttering his intent ;
 As be'ing aduis'd, not so much to reueale,
 Whereby they might be made againe content :
 But, when they grieued for the Common-weale,
 He doth perswade them to be patient,
 And to indure ; there was no other course :
 Yet, so perswades, as makes their malice worse.

112

And then, with such as with the time did run,
 In most vpright opinion he doth stand ;
 As one, that neuer croft what they begun,
 But seem'd to like that which they tooke in hand :
 Seeking all causes of offence to shun,
 Prayses the Rule, and blames th'vnruly Land ;
 Works so with gifts, and kindly offices,
 That, euen of them, he serues his turne no lesse.

St. 111, l. 1, ' Then in her passion lo she vttered ' ;² l. 3, ' As being
 sure ' .

St. 112, l. 2, ' He doth in most ' .

113

Then, as for thofe, who were his followers
(Being all choyce men for virtues, or defearts)
He fo with grace, and benefits prefers,
That he becomes the Monarch of their hearts.
He gets the learned, for his Counsaylers ;
And cherishes all men of rareſt parts :
“ To whom, good done, doth an impressio ſtrike
“ Of ioy and loue, in all that are alike.

114

And now, by meanes of th'intermittēd warre,
Many moft valiant men, impov'rished,
Onely by him fed and relieved are ;
Onely reſpected, grac't and honoured.
Which let him in, vnto their hearts fo farre,
As they by him were wholly to be led.
“ He onely treads the ſure and perfect path
“ To Greatneſſe, who loue and opinion hath.

115

And, to haue one ſome certaine Prouince his,
As the maine body that muſt worke the feate,
Yorkeſhire he chose, the place wherein he is
By title, liuings, and poſſeſſions great.
No Country hee preferres, ſo much as this :
Here, hath his Bountie, her abiding ſeat :
Here, is his Iuſtice, and relieuing hand,
Ready to all, that in diſtreſſe do ſtand.

116

What with his tenants, seruants, followers, friends,
And their alliances, and amities,
All that *Shire* vniuersally attends
His hand, held vp to any enterprize.
And thus farre, Virtue with her power extends :
The rest, touching th'euent, in Fortune lies.
With which accomplements, so mightie growne,
Forward he tends, with hope t'attaine a Crowne.

The ende of the fift Booke.



THE SIXT BOOKE.¹

THE ARGVMENT.

*The bad successe of Cades rebellion :
Yorke open practise and conspiracie :
His comming in, and his submiffion :
Th'effect of Printing and Artillerie.
Burdeux revolts ; craues our protection :
Talbot, defending ours, dyes gloriously.
The French warres end : and Yorke begins againe ;
And, at S. Albones, Sommerset is flaine.*



I
HE furious traine of that tumultuous
rout,
Whom close sub-ayding power, and
good successe,
Had made vnwisely proud, and
fondly stout,
Thrust headlong on, oppression to
oppreſſe ;

¹ In ¹, Book 'Sixt' here is Book 'Fyft,' and as in the preceding I give various readings from it and ². Book 'Fyft' was first published in ²(1599). Appended, however, to some copies of 1595 edition is Book 'Fift,' identical

And now, to fulnesse growne, boldly giue out,
 That they the publique wrongs meant to redresse :¹
 " Formelesse themselues, reforming doe pretend ;
 " As if Confusion could Disorder mend.

2

And on they march, with their false-named Head,
 Of base and vulgar birth, though noble fayn'd :
 Who, pust with vaine desires, to London led
 His rash abused troupes, with shadowes train'd :
 When-as the King, thereof ascertained,
 Supposing some fmall power would haue restrain'd
 Disordred rage, sents with a simple crew
Sir Humfrey Stafford; whom they ouer-threw.

3

Which so increast th'opinion of their might,
 That much it gaue to do, and much it wrought ;
 Confirm'd their rage, drew on the vulgar wight,
 Call'd foorth the timorous, fresh partakers brought :

throughout with 1599, save that folio 89, in the head-line, wood-cut ornament and wood-cut border of the Argument are different from 1599, and spells 'fyft' in 1595 and 'fift' in 1599, 1601, and 1602. The Heading in both is 'The fift Booke of the Ciuell warres betweene the two Houses of Lancaster and Yorke.'

¹ The Commons of Kent with their Leader Iacke Cade diuulge their many grieuances : amongst which, That the King was driuen to liue onely on his Commons ; & other men to inioy the Reuenues of the Crowne ; which caused pouertie in his Maiestie, and the great payments of the people, now late granted to the King in Parlement. Also they desire, that the King would remoue all the false progeny and affinitie of the late D. of Suffolke which be openly knowne, and them to punish, and to take about his person the true Lords of his royll bloud ; to wit, the mightie Prince the D. of Yorke, late exiled by the traytous motion of the false D. of Suffolke, and his affinitie, &c. Also they craue that they who contrived the death of the high and mighty Prince, Humfrey D. of Gloucester, might haue punishment.

For, many, though most glad their wrongs to right,
 Yet durst not venture their estates for nought :
 But, see'ing the Cause had such aduantage got,
 Occasion makes them stirre, that else would not.

4

So much he erres, that scornes, or else neglects
 The small beginnings of arysing broyles ;
 And censures others, not his owne defects,
 And with a selfe-conceite himselfe beguiles ;
 Thinking small force will compasse great effects,
 And spares at first to buy more costly toyles :
 " When true-obseruing prouidence, in warre,
 " Still makes her foes, farre stronger then they are.

5

Yet this good fortune, all their fortune mard ;
 " Which, fooles by helping, euer doth supprese.
 For, wareles insolence (whil'st vndebard
 Of bounding awe) runnes on to such excesse,
 That following lust, and spoyle, and blood, so hard,
 Sees not how they procure their owne distresse :
 The better, lothing courses so impure,
 Rather will like their wounds, then such a cure.

6

For, whil'st this wilde vnrained multitude
 (Led with an vnfore-seeing greedy mind
 Of an imagin'd good, that did delude
 Their ignorance, in their desires made blind)
 Ranfacke the Cittie, and (with hands imbru'd)
 Run to all out-rage in th'extreamest kind ;
 Heaping-vp wrath and horrour, more and more,
 They adde fresh guilt, to mischieves done before.

7

And yet, se'ing all this sorting to no end,
 But to their owne ; no promis'd ayde t'appeare ;
 No such partakers as they did attend ;
 Nor such successes as imagin'd were ;
 Good men resolv'd, the prefent to defend ;
 Iustice, against them with a brow feuere :
 Themselues, feard of themselues, tyr'd with excesse,
 " Found, mischiefe was no fit way to redresse.

8

And as they stand in desperat comberment,
 Enuirond round with horror, blood, and shame :
 Croft of their course, despayring of th'euent
 A pardon (that smooth bait for basenesse) came :

St. 7, l. 1, ' And seeing yet . . . dread ' ^{1, 2, 3}.
 After st. 7 come the two following in 1 :—

8.

Like when a greedy Pyrat hard in chace
 Purfuing of a rich supposed prize,
 Works for the winds, plies fayles, beares vp a pace,
 Out-runnes the cloudes, scoures after her that flyes ;
 Pryde in his hart, and wealth before his face :
 Keepes his hands wrought, and fixed keepes his eyes,
 So long, till that ingag'd within some straight
 He falles amid his foes, layd close in wayt.

9.

Where all too late discouering round about
 Danger and death the purchase of his haft ;
 And no backe flying, no way to get out,
 But there to perriish, or to yeild difgraft,
 Cursing his error, yet in th'error stout :
 Hee toyles for life, now charges, now is chaft :
 Then quailes, and then fresh courage takes againe,
 Striuing t'vnwind himselfe, but all in vaine. So ^{1, 2}.

St. 8, l. 1, ' So stands this rout ' ^{1, 2, 3} : l. 4, ' When . . . of ' ^{1, 2, 3}.

Which (as a snare, to catch the impotent)
 Beeing once pronounc't, they straight imbrace the fame:
 And, as huge snowy Mountaines melt with heat ;
 So they dissolv'd with hope, and home they get :

9

Leauing their Captaine to discharge, alone,
 The shot of blood, consumed in their heate¹ :
 Too small a sacrifice, for mischiefs done,
 Was one mans breath, which thousands did defeat.
 Vnrighteous Death, why art thou but all one
 Vnto the small offender and the great ?
 Why art thou not more then thou art, to those
 That thousands spoyle, and thousands liues do lose ?

IO

This furie, passing with so quick an end,
 Disclof'd not those that on th'aduantage lay :
 Who, seeing the course to such disorder tend,
 With-drew their foote, ashamed to take that way ;
 Or else preuented, whil'st they did attend
 Some mightier force, or for occasion stay :
 But, what they meant, ill-fortune must not tell ;
 Mischife be'ing oft made good, by speeding well.

II

Put-by from this, the Duke of *Yorke* deßsignes
 Another course to bring his hopes about² :
 And, with those friends affinitie combines
 In surest bonds, his thoughts he poureth-out :

St. 8, l. 5, 'Pardon (the snare')¹, ², ³.

¹ Anno Reg. 29.

² The D. of York, who at this time was in Ireland (sent thither to appease a Rebellion : which hee effected in such fort, as got him & his linage

And closely feeles, and closely vndermines
 The faith of whom he had both hope and doubt ;
 Meaning, in more apparent open course,
 To try his right, his fortune, and his force.

I 2

Loue, and alliance, had most firmly ioynd
 Vnto his part, that mighty Familie,
 The faire distended stock of *Neuiles* kind ;
 Great by their many issued progenie :
 But greater by their worth (that clearely shin'd,
 And gaue faire light to their nobilitie)
 So that each corner of the Land became
 Enricht with some great *Worthy*, of that name.

exceeding loue and liking with that people euer after) returning home, and pretending great iniuries to be offered him, both whiles hee was in the K. seruice, & likewise vpon his landing in North-wales, combines himself with Ric. Neuile E. of Salis. secōd son to Ralph, E. of Westmerland (whose daughter hee had married) & with Ri. Neuile the son, E. of Warw. with other his especiall friēds, with whō he consults, for the reformation of the government, after hee had complained of the great disorders therein : Laying the blame, for the losse of Normādy vpō the D. of Sommerf. whom, vpon his returning thence, hee caused to be arrested and committed.

St. 12, ll. 7, 8—‘A mightie partie for a mightie cause,
 By theyr vnitid amitie hee drawes’¹.

After st. 12 (= 14) comes this in 1, 2, 3 :—

‘For as the spreading members of proud *Po*,
 That thousand-branched *Po*, whose limnes embrace
 Thy fertile and delicious body so
 Sweet *Lombardie*, and beautifies thy face :
 Such seem'd this powreful stock, frō whence did grow
 So many great discents, spreading theyr raee
 That every corner of the Land became
 Enricht with some great *Heroes* of that name.’

I 3

But greatest in renowne doth *Warwicke* sit ;
 That braue King-maker *Warwicke* ; so farre growne,
 In grace with Fortune, that he gouerns it,
 And Monarchs makes ; and, made, againe puts downe.
 What reuolutions, his first-mouing wit
 Heere brought about, are more then too well knowne ;
 The fatall kindle-fire of those hot daies :
 Whose worth I may, whose worke I cannot praife.

I 4

With him, with *Richard*, Earle of *Salisbury*,
Courtney and *Brooke*, and other his deare friends ;
 He intimates his minde ; and openly
 The present bad proceedings discommends ;
 Laments the State, the peoples misery,
 And (that which such a pitier seldom mends)
 Oppression, that sharp two-edged sword,
 That others wounds, and wounds likewife his Lord.

I 5

“ My Lords (faith he) how things are caried heere,
 “ In this corrupted State, you plainly see ;
 “ What burthen our abused shoulders beare,
 “ Charg’d with the waight of imbecillitie :
 “ And in what base account all we appeare,
 “ That stand without their grace that all must be ;
 “ And who they be, and how their course succeeds,
 “ Our shame reports, and time bewraies their deedes.

St. 15, l. 1, ‘Lord’¹ (bad) : ‘Lords’ in ², ³.

16

" *Aniou and Maine* (the name that foule appeares ;
 " Th'eternall scarre of our dismembred Land)
 " *Guien*, all lost ; that did, three hundred yeares,
 " Remaine subiected vnder our Commaund.
 " From whence, mee thinks, there sounds vnto our eares
 " The voice of thosse deare ghosts, whose liuing hand
 " Got it with sweat, and kept it with their blood,
 " To doe vs (thankles vs) their of-spring good :

17

" And seeme to cry ; What ? can you thus behold
 " Their hauisfull feete vpon our Graues should tread ?
 " Your Fathers Graues ; who gloriously did hold
 " That, which your shame hath left recouered ?
 " Redeeme our Tumbs, O spirits too too cold :
 " Pull-backe these Towres, our Armes haue honored.
 " These Towres are yours : these Forts we built for you :
 " These walles doe beare our names ; and are your due.

18

" Thus, well they may vpbraide our retchlesnes ;
 " Whil'st wee, as if at league with infamie,
 " Ryot away, for nought, whole Prouinces ;
 " Giue vp, as nothing worth, all *Normandie* ;
 " Traffique important Holdes, sell Fortresses
 " So long, that nought is left but misery ;
 " Poore *Calais*, and these water-walles about,
 " That basely pownd vs in, from breaking out.

St. 16, l. 1, in ¹ misprinted 'O maine' : l. 2, no 'Th' in ¹ : l. 3, 'And Guiens lost' ¹.

St. 17, l. 1, 'O how' ¹.

St. 18, l. 1, 'obrayd' ¹ : l. 5, 'strong holds' ¹ : l. 8, 'pownds' ¹.

19

" And (which is worse) I feare, we shall in th'end
 " (Throwne from the glory of inuading Warre)
 " Be forc't our proper limits to defend :
 " Where euer men are not the fame they are,
 " The hope of conquest, doth their spirits extend
 " Beyond the vsuall powres of valour, farre :
 " For, more is he that ventureth for more,
 " Then who fights, but for what hee had before.

20

" Put-to your hands, therefore, to reskew now
 " Th'indangered State (deare Lords) from this disgrace:
 " And let vs in our honour, labour how
 " To bring this scorned Land in better case.
 " No doubt, but God our action will allow,
 " That knowes my right, and how they rule the place,
 " Whose weakenes calls-vp our vnwillingnesse ;
 " As opening euen the doore to our redresse.

21

" Though I protest, it is not for a Crowne
 " My foule is moov'd (yet, if it be my right,
 " I haue no reason to refuse mine owne)
 " But onely these indignities to right.
 " And what if God (whose iudgements are vnknowne)
 " Hath me ordain'd the man, that by my might
 " My Country shall be blest ? If so it be ;
 " By helping me, you raiſe your felues with me.

St. 19, l. 4, ; for , of ' , ' : l. 5, ' Where ' .

22

Those, in whom zeale and amity had bred
 A fore-impression of the right he had,
 These stirring words so much incouraged,
 That (with desire of innouation mad)
 They seem'd to runne-afore, not to be led ;
 And to his fire doe quicker fuell adde :
 For, where such humors are prepar'd before ;
 The opening them, makes them abound the more.

23

Then counsell take they, fitting their desire :
 (For, nought that fits not their desire is waigh'd)
 The Duke is straight aduised to retire
 Into the bounds of *Wales*, to leauie ayd¹ :
 Which vnder smooth pretence he doth require ;
 T'amoue such persons as the State betray'd,
 And to redresse th'oppression of the Land ;
 The charme, which Weakenesse seldome doth withstand.

24

Ten thousand, straight caught with this bait of breath,
 Are towards greater lookt-for forces led :
 Whose power, the King, by all meanes, trauaileth
 In their arising to haue ruined :

St. 22, l. 1, 'In those whom', *, *.

¹ The D. of Yorke raiseth an Army in the marches of Wales, vnder pretext to remoue diuers Couellers about the King, and to reuenge the manifest iniuries don to the Commonwealth : & withal, he publisheth a declaratiō of his loyalty, and the wrongs done him by his aduersaries ; offering to take his oath vpō the blessed Sacrament, to haue been euer true liege-man to the K. and so euer to continue. Which declaration, was written from his Castle of Ludlow, the 9 of Ianua. An. reg. 30. The 16 of Febru. the K. vvith the D. of Sōmerfet, & other LL. set forward towards the Marches : but the D. of Yorke, took other waies, and made vp towards London.

But, their preuenting Head so compassest,
 That all ambushments warily are fled ;
 Refusing ought to hazard by the way,
 Keeping his Greatnesse for a greater day.

25

And to the Cittie straight directs his course ;
 The Cittie, seate of Kings, and Kings chiefe grace :
 Where, hauing found his entertainement worse
 By farre, then he expected in that place ;
 Much disappointed, drawes from thence his force,
 And towards better trust, marcheth apace ;
 And downe in *Kent* (fatall for discontents)
 Neere to thy bankes, faire *Thames*, doth pitch his tents.

26

And there, intrencht, plants his Artillerie ;
 Artillerie, th'infernall instrument,
 New-brought from hell,¹ to scourge mortalitie
 With hideous roaring, and astonishment :
 Engine of horrour, fram'd to terrifie
 And teare the Earth, and strongest Towres to rent :
 Torment of Thunder, made to mocke the skies ;
 As more of power, in our calamities.

27

If that first fire (subtile *Prometheus* brought)
 Stolne out of heaven, did so afflict man-kinde,
 That euer since, plagu'd with a curious thought
 Of stirring search, could neuer quiet finde ;

¹ The vse of Guns, and great Ordinance, began about this time, or not long before.

St. 25, l. 3, 'finding of' !.

St. 27, l. 1, 'O if the ' !: no 'O' in ?, ?.

What hath he done, who now by stealth hath got
 Lightning and thunder both, in wondrous kinde ?
 What plague deserues so proud an enterprize ?
 Tell Mufe, and how it came, and in what wise.

28

It was the time, when faire *Europa*¹ fate
 With many goodly Diadems addrest ;
 And all her parts in florishing estate
 Lay beautiful, in order, at their rest :
 No swelling member, vnproportionate,
 Growne out of forme, sought to disturbe the rest :
 The leſſe, ſubfifting by the greater's might ;
 The greater, by the leſſer kept vpright.

29

No noise of tumult euer wak't them all :
 Onely, perhaps, ſome priuate iarre within,
 For titles, or for confines, might befall ;
 Which, ended ſoone, made better loue begin :
 But no eruption did, in generall,
 Breake down their rest, with vniuersall fin :
 No publique ſhock diſioynted this faire frame,
 Till *Nemesis* from out the Orient came ;

¹ This principall part of Europe, which contained the moft florishing ſtate of Christendom, was at this time in the hands of many ſeverall Princes, and Commonwealths, which quietly gouerned the ſame : for, being ſo many, and none ouer-great, they were leſſe attemptive to disturbe others, & more carefull to keepe their owne, with a muthal corrēpondēce of amitie. As Italy had theſe many more principalities & Commonwealths then it hath : Spaine was divided into many kingdoms : France conuifted of diuers free Princes : Both the Germanies of many more Gouernments.

30

Fierce *Nemesis*, mother of fate and change,
 Sword-bearer of th'eternall Prouidence
 (That had so long, with such afflictions strange,
 Confounded *Asias* proud magnificence,
 And brought foule impious Barbarisme to range
 On all the glory of her excellency)
 Turnes her sterne looke at last vnto the West ;
 As griev'd to see on earth such happy rest.

31

And for *Pandora* calleth presently
 (*Pandora*, Ioues faire gift, that first deceiv'd
 Poore *Epimetheus* imbecillitie,
 That thought he had a wondrous boone receiv'd ;
 By means whereof, curious Mortalitie
 Was of all former quiet quite bereav'd) :
 To whom, beeing come, deckt with all qualities,
 The wrathfull Goddesse breakes out in this wife :

32

Dooft thou not see in what secur estate
 Thoſe florishing faire Westerne parts remaine ?
 As if they had made couenaunt with Fate,
 To be exempted free from others paine ;
 At-one with their desires, friends with Debate,
 In peace with Pride, content with their owne gaine ;
 Their bounds containe their minds, their minds appli'd.
 To haue their bounds with plentie beautifi'd.

St. 30 (= 33), l. 1 in 2, 'Nemesis.'

33

Deuotion (mother of Obedience)
 Beares such a hand on their credulitie,
 That it abates the spirit of eminence,
 And busies them with humble pietie.
 For, see what workes, what infinite expence,
 What monuments of zeale they edifie ;
 As if they would, so that no stop were found,
 Fill all with Temples, make all holy ground.

34

But wee must coole this all-belieuing zeale,
 That hath enioy'd so faire a turne so long ;
 And other reuolutions must reueale,
 Other desires, other designes among :
 Dislike of this, first by degrees shall steale
 Vpon the soules of men, perswaded wrong :
 And that abused Power,¹ which thus hath wrought,
 Shall giue herselfe the sword to cut her throat.

35

Goe therefore thou, with all thy stirring traine
 Of swelling Sciences, the gifts of grieve :
 Go loose the links ^{of} that soule-binding chaine ;
 Inlarge this vninguisitue Belife :
 Call vp mens spirits, that simplenes retaine :
 Enter their harts, & Knowledge make the thicke
 To open all the doores, to let in light ;
 That all may all things see, but what is right.

¹ The Church.

St. 34, l. 7, 'And th'abuf'd power that such a power hath got ' ¹, ², ³.

St. 35, l. 1, 'Goe thou therefore ' ¹, ², ³ : l. 5, ' . . . when darknes cloth
 detaine ' ¹.

36

Opinion Arme against Opinion growne :
 Make new-borne Contradiction stll to rife ;
 As if *Thebes*-founder, *Cadmus*, tongues had sowne,
 Instead of teeth, for greater mutinies.
 Bring new-defended Faith, against Faith knowne :
 Weary the Soule with contrarieties ;
 Till all Religion become retrograde,
 And that faire tire, the maske of sinne be made.

37

And, better to effect a speedy end,
 Let there be found two fatall Instruments,
 The one to publish, th'other to defend,
 Impious Contention, and proud Discontents :
 Make, that instamped Characters may send
 Abroad, to thousands, thousand mens intent ;
 And in a moment may dispatch much more,
 Then could a world of Pennes performe before.

38

Whereby, all quarrels, titles, secrecies,
 May vnto all be presently made knowne ;
 Factions prepar'd, parties allur'd to rife,
 Sedition vnder faire pretentions sowne :
 Whereby, the vulgar may become so wise,
 That (with a self-presumption ouer-growne)
 They may of deepest mysteries debate,
 Controule their betters, censure actes of State.

St. 36, l. 5, 'lyke' 1.

39

And then, when this dispersed mischiefe shall
 Haue brought confusion in each mysterie,
 Call'd-vp contempt of states in generall,
 Ripened the humor of impiety ;
 Then haue they th'other Engin, where-with-all
 They may torment their selfe-wrought miserie,
 And scourge each other, in so strange a wise,
 As time or Tyrants neuer could devise.

40

For, by this stratagem, they shall confound
 All th'antient forme and discipline of Warre :
 Alter their Camps, alter their fights, their ground,
 Daunt mightie spirits, prowesse and manhood marre :
 For, basest cowarde from a far shall wound
 The most couragious, forc't to fight afarre ;
 Valour, wrapt vp in smoake (as in the night)
 Shall perish without witnesse, without fight.

41

But first, before this generall disease
 Breake foorth into so great extreamitie,
 Prepare it by degrees ; first kill this ease,
 Spoyle this proportion, marre this harmonie :
 Make greater States vpon the lesser seaze :
 Ioyne many kingdomes to one soueraigntie :
 Rayse a few Great, that may (with greater power)
 Slaughter each other, and mankinde deuour.¹

¹ Th many States of Christendome reduced to a few.

42

And first begin, with factions, to diuide
The fairest Land ; that from her thrusts the rest,
As if she car'd not for the world beside ;
A world within her selfe, with wonders blest :
Raife such a strife as time shall not decide,
Till the deare blood of most of all her best
Be poured foorth, and all her people tost
With vnkinde tumults, and almost all lost.

43

Let her be made the sable Stage, whereon
Shall first be acted bloodie Tragedies ;
That all the neighbour States, gazing thereon,
May make their profite, by her miseries :
And those, whom she before had marcht vpon,
(Hauing, by this, both time and meane to rise)
Made martiall by her Armes, shall growe so great,
As (sauing their owne) no force shall them defeat :

44

That when their power, vnable to sustaine
And beare it selfe, vpon it selfe shall fall,
She may (recouered of her wounds againe)
Sit and behold their Parts as tragicall :
For there must come a time, that shall obtaine
Truce for distresse ; when make-peace *Hymen* shall
Bring the conioyned aduerse powers to bed,
And set the Crowne (made one) vpon one head.

45

Out of which blessed vnion, shall arise
 A sacred branch (with grace and glory blest)
 Whose Virtue shall her Land so patronize,
 As all our power shall not her dayes molest :
 For, shee (faire shee) the Minion of the skyes,
 Shall purchase (of the high'ſt) to hers such reſt
 (Standing betweene the wrath of heauen and them)
 As no diſtreſſe ſhall touch her Diadem :

46

And, from the Rockes of Safetie, ſhall deſcrie
 The wondrouſ wracks, that Wrath layes ruined ;
 All round about her, blood and miſerie,
 Powres betray'd, Princes ſlaine, Kings maſſacred,
 States all-confuſ'd, brought to calamitie,
 And all the face of Kingdomeſ altered :
 Yet, ſhe the ſame inuiolable stands,
 Deare to her owne, wonder to other Lands.

47

But, let not her defence diſcourage thee.
 For, neuer one, but ſhee, ſhall haue this grace,
 From all diſturbs to be ſo long kept free,
 And with ſuch glorie to diſcharge that place.

After ſt. 45 (= 48) comes this stanza in 1, 2, 3 :—

49.

Though thou ſhalt ſecke by al the means thou may,
 And Arme impiety and hell and all,
 Styrre vp her owne, make others to assay,
 Bring fayth diſguifd, the power of Pluto call,
 Call all thy crafts to practife her decay,
 And yet ſhall this take no effect at all :
 For ſhee ſecure (as intimate with Fate)
 Shall fit and ſcorne thoſe base deſignes of hate.

St. 47, l. 2, 'none' ¹.

And therefore, if by such a Power thou bee
Stopt of thy course, reckon it no disgrace ;
Sith shee alone (being priuiledg'd from hie)
Hath this large Patent of her dignitie.

48

This charge the Goddesse gaue : when, ready straight
The subtil messenger, accompayned
With all her crew of Artes that on her wait,
Hastes to effect what she was counsailed :
And out she pours, of her immense conceit,
Vpon such searching spirits as trauayled
In penetrating hidden secrecies ;
Who soone these meanes of miserie deuise.

49

And boldly breaking with rebellious minde
Into their mothers close-lockt Treasurie,
They Mineralls combustible do finde,
Which in stopt concaves placed cunningly,
They fire : and fire, imprisoned against kinde,
Teares out a way, thrusts out his enemie ;
Barking with such a horror, as if wroth
With man, that wrongs himselfe, and Nature both.

50

And this beginning had this cursed frame,
Which *Yorke* now planted hath against his King¹ ;
Presuming, by his powre, and by the same,
His purpose vnto good effect to bring ;

¹ The D. of Yorke being not admitted into the Citiie, paſſed ouer Kingſt^c Bridge, and fo into Kent, and on Brent heath neere Dartf. pigh this field. The K. makes after, and imbatteleſd vpon Blacke heath : from whence he ſendes the BB. of Winchſter and Ely with the EE. of Salifbury & Warwike to mediat a peace.

St. 47, l. 8, 'eternitie' !. St. 48 = 52), l. 5, 'misprints 'mimens'

When diuers of the grauest Councell came,
Sent from the King, to vnderstand what thing
Had thrust him into these proceedings bad,
And what he sought, and what intent he had.

51

Who, with words mildly-sharpe, gently-feuere,
Wrought on those wounds that must be toucht with heed ;
Applying rather salues of hope, then feare,
Leaft corrasives should desparat mischiefes breed.
And, what my Lord (sayd they) should moue you here,
In this vnseemely manner to proceed ?
Whose worth being such, as all the Land admires,
Hath fairer wayes then these, to your desires.

52

Wil you, whose means, whose many friends, whose
grace,
Can worke the world in peace vnto your will,
Take such a course, as shal your Blood deface,
And make (by handling bad) a good Cause, ill ?
How many hearts hazard you in this case,
That in all quiet plots would ayde you still ?
Hauing in Court a Partie farre more strong
Then you conceiue, prest to redrefse your wrong.

53

Phy, phy ! forsake this hatefull course, my Lord :
Downe with these Armes, that will but wound your
Cause.
What Peace may do, hazard not with the Sword :
Lay downe the force that from your force with-drawes ;

St. 53, l. 1, 'Fy, fy' ; 'Fie, fie' ; l. 4, 'Fly from' ;

And yeeld : and we will mediate such accord
 As shal dispense with rigor and the lawes ;
 And interpose this solemne fayth of our
 Betwixt your fault, and the offended Power.

54

Which ingins of protests, and proffers kinde,
 Vrg'd out of seeming grieve and shewes of loue,
 So shooke the whole foundation of his Minde,
 As they did all his resolution moue,
 And present seem'd vnto their course inclin'd ;
 So that the King would *Sommerfet* remoue ;
 The man, whose most intolerable pride
 Trode down his worth, and all good mens beside.¹

55

Which, they there vow'd, should presently be done :
 For, what will not peace-louers willing graunt,
 Where dangerous euent depend thereon,
 And men vnfurisht, and the State in want ?
 And if with words the conquest will be won,
 The cost is small : and who holds breath so scant
 As then to spare, though with indignitie ?
 " Better descend, then end, in Maiestie.

56

And here-upon the Duke dissolues his force,
 Submits him to the King, on publique vow :
 The rather too, presuming on this course,
 For-that his sonne, the Earle of *March*, was now

¹ And finding the Kentish men not to answere his expectation, and the kings forces farre more then his, he willingly condicteuds to conditions of peace. Edmond D. of Sommerfet of the house of Lancaster, descended from Iohn of Gante, was the especiall man against whom he pretended his quarrell.

With mightier powers abroad : which would inforce
His peace ; which else the King would not allow.
For, feeing not all of him, in him, he hath,
His death would but giue life to greater wrath.

57

Yet, comming to the King, in former place
(His foe) the Duke of *Sommerset* he findes :
Whom openly, reproching to his face,
Hee charg'd with treason in the higheft kindes.
The Duke returnes like speeches of disgrace ;
And fierie wordes bewray'd their flaming mindes :
But yet the triall was for them deserfd,
Till fitter time allow'd it to be heard.

58

At Westminster, a Counsell, sommoned,
Deliberates what course the Cause shoulde end
Of th'apprehended Duke of *Yorke* ; whose head
Doth now on others doubtfull breath depend.
Law fiercely vrg'd his act, and found him dead :
Friends fayl'd to speake, where they could not defend :
Onely the King himselfe for mercy stood ;
As, prodigall of life, niggard of blood.

59

And, as if angrie with the Lawes of death,
“ Ah ! why should you, sayd he, vrge things so far ?
“ You, that inur'd with mercenarie breath,
“ And hyred tongue, so peremptorie are ;
“ Brauing on him whom sorrow prostrateth :
“ As if you did with poore Affliction warre,

St. 58, l. 1, ‘gathered’ & l. 4, ‘deed’. St. 59 l. 2, ‘And’ (bad).

" And prey on Frayltie, Folly hath betray'd ;
 " Bringing the lawes to wound, neuer to ayd.

60

" Dispense sometime with sterne feueritie ;
 " Make not the Lawes still traps to apprehend ;
 " Win grace vpon the bad with clemencie ;
 " Mercie may mend, whom malice made offend.
 " Death giues no thankes, but checkes Authoritie :
 " And life doth onely Maiestie commend.
 " Reuenge dies not, Rigor begets new wrath :
 " And blood hath neuer glorie ; Mercy hath.

61

" And for my part (and my part should be chiese)
 " I am most willing to restore his state :
 " And rather had I win him with relief,
 " Then lose him with despight, and get more hate.
 " Pittie drawes loue : blood-shed is natures griefe ;
 " Compassion followes the vnfortunate :
 " And, losing him, in him I lose my power.
 " We rule who liue : the dead are none of our.

62

" And should our rigor lessen then the fame,
 " Which we with greater glorie should retaine ?
 " No ; let him liue : his life must giue vs fame ;
 " The childe of mercie newly borne againe.
 " As often burials are Physicians shame ;
 " So, many deaths argue a Kings hard Raigne.
 " Why shoulde we say, The Law must have her vigor ?
 The Law kills him ; but quits not vs of rigor.

63

" You, to get more preferment by your wit,
 " Others to gaine the spoyles of miserie,
 " Labour with all your powre to follow it ;
 " Shewing vs feares, to draw-on crueltie.
 " You vrge th'offence, not tell vs what is fit :
 " Abusing wrong-informed Maiestie :
 " As if our powre, were onely but to slay,
 " And that to saue, were a most dangerous way.

64

Thus, out of Pittie, speake that holy King :
 Whom milde affections led to hope the best ;
 When *Sommerset* began to vrge the thing
 With words of hotter temper, thus exprest ;
 " Deare soueraigne Lord, the Cause in managing
 " Is more then yours ; t'imports the publique rest :
 " We all haue part, it toucheth all our good :
 " And life's ill spar'd, that's spar'd to cost more blood.

65

" Compassion, here, is crueltie my Lord ;
 " Pittie will cut our throates, for sauing so.
 " What benefite enjoy we by the sword,
 " If mischiefe shall escape to draw-on mo ?
 " Why should we giue, what Law cannot afford,
 " To be'accessaries to our proper wo ?
 " Wisedome must iudge, 'twixt men apt to amend,
 " And mindes incurable, borne to offend.

66

" It is no priuat Cause (I do protest)
 " That moues me thus to prosecute his deede.
 " Would God his blood, and mine, had well releaste
 " The dangers, that his pride is like to breed.
 " Although, at me, hee seemes to haue addrest
 " His spight ; 'tis not the end hee hath decreed,
 " I am not he alone, hee doth pursue :
 " But thorow me, he meanes to shooft at you.

67

" For, thus, these great Reformers of a State
 " (Aspiring to attaine the Gouernment)
 " Still take aduantage of the peoples hate,
 " Who euer hate such as are eminent.
 " (For, who can great affaires negotiat,
 " And all a wayward multitude content ?)
 " And then these people-minions, they must fall
 " To worke-out vs, to work themselues int'all.

68

" But note, my Lord, first, who is in your hand ;
 " Then, how he hath offended, what's his end :
 " It is the man, whose Race would seeme to stand
 " Before your Right, and doth a Right pretend :
 " Who (Traitor-like) hath raiſ'd a mightie Band,
 " With colour, your proceedings to amend.
 " Which if it should haue hapned to succeed,
 " You had not now fate to adiudge his deed.

St. 67, l. 1, 'For this course euer they deliberate ' ^{1, 2, 3} : l. 2, 'Which do
 aspyre to reach ' ^{1, 2, 3} : l. 3, 'To ' ^{1, 2, 3} : l. 4, 'thoſe ' ^{1, 2, 3} : l. 5, 'manage
 . . . of ſtate' ^{1, 2, 3}.

69

" If oftentimes the person, not th'offence,
 " Haue beene sufficient cause of death to some,
 " Where publique safety puts in euidence
 " Of mischiefe, likely by their life to come ;
 " Shall hee, whose fortune, and his insolence,
 " Haue both deserv'd to die, escape that doome ;
 " When you shall faue your Land, your Crowne thereby ;
 " And since You cannot liue, vnlesse He die ?

70

Thus spake th'aggrieved Duke, that grauely saw
 Th'incompatible powers of Princes mindes ;
 And what affliction his escape might draw
 Vnto the State, and people of all kindes :
 And yet the humble yeelding, and the aw,
 Which *Yorke* there shew'd, so good opinion findes,
 That (with the rumor of his Sonnes great strength,
 And French affaires) he there came quit at length.¹

71

For, euen the feare t'exasperat the heat
 Of th'Earle of *March*, whose forward youth and might
 Well follow'd, seem'd a proud reuenge to threat,
 If any shame should on his Father light :
 And then desire in *Gascoyne* to reget
 The glorie lost, which home-broyles hinder might,
 Aduantaged the Duke, and sav'd his head ;
 Which, questionlesse, had else beene hazarded.

¹ The D. was suffred to go to his Castle at Wigmore.

72

For, now had *Burdeux* offered (vpon ayd)
 Prefent reuolt, if we would send with speed.¹
 Which faire aduantage to haue then delay'd,
 Vpon such hopes, had beene a shamefull deed.
 And therefore this, all other courses stayd,
 And outwardly these inward hates agreed ;
 Giuing an interpause to pride and spight :
 Which breath'd, but to breake-out with greater might.

73

Whil'st dreadfull *Talbot*, terror late of *Fraunce*,
 (Against the *Genius* of our Fortune) stroue,
 The downe-throwne glorie of our State t'aduance ;
 Where *Fraunce* far more then *Fraunce* he now doth proue:
 For, friends, opinion, and succeeding chaunce
 (Which wrought the weake to yeeld, the strong to loue)
 Were not the same, that he had found before
 In happier times ; when lesse would haue done more.

74

For, both the *Britaine*, and *Burgonian* now,²
 Came altered with our lucke, and won with theirs
 (Those bridges, and the gates, that did allow
 So easie passage vnto our affaires)
 Iudging it safer to endeuour how
 To link with strength, then leane vnto despaires.

¹ The Cittie of Burdeux send their Ambassadours offring to reuolt from the French part if ayd might be sent vnto them: whereupon, Iohn L. Talbot E. of Shrewsburie was employed with a powre of 3000 men, and surprised the Cittie of Burdeux.

² The Dukes of Britany and Burgundy were great meanes in times past for the conquering of France.

St. 73, l. 7, 'as' !.

" And, who wants friends, to backe what he begins,
 " In Lands far off, gets not, although he wins.

75

Which too well prov'd this fatall enterprize,
 The last, that lost vs all wee had to lose.
 Where, though aduantag'd by some mutinies,
 And pettie Lords, that in our Cause arose :
 Yet those great fayl'd ; whose ready quick supplies,
 Euer at hand, cheer'd vs, and quail'd our foes.
 Succours from far, come seldome to our minde.
 " For, who holds league with *Neptune*, and the wind?

76

Yet, worthy *Talbot*,¹ thou didst so employ
 The broken remnants of disscattered power,
 That they might see it was our destiny,
 Not want of spirit, that lost vs what was our :
 Thy dying hand fold them the victorie
 With so deare wounds, as made the conquest sowre :
 So much it cost to spoyle who were vndon ;
 And such adoe to win, when they had won.

77

For, as a fierce courageous Mastiue fares ;
 That, hauing once sure fast'ned on his foe,
 Lyes tugging on that hold, neuer forbeares,
 What force soeuer force him to forgo :
 The more he feeles his woundes, the more he dares ;
 As if his death were sweet, in dying so :

¹ The E. of Shrewsburie accompayned with his sonne Sir John Talbot, L. Lisle by the right of his wife, with the LL. Molins, Harrington, and Cameis, Sir John Howard, Sir Iohn Vernon & others, recouered diuers townes in Gascony : amongst other, the towne, and Castle of Chastillon in Perigent which the French soone after besieged.

So held his hold this Lord, whil'st he held breath ;
And scarce, but with much blood, lets goe in death.

78

For, though he saw prepar'd, against his side,
Both vnlike fortune, and vnequall force,
Borne with the swelling current of their pride
Downe the maine streme of a most happy course :
Yet standes he stiffe, vndasht, vnterrifi'd ;
His minde the same, although his fortune worse :
Virtue in greatest dangers being best showne ;
And though opprest, yet neuer ouer-thrown.

79

For, rescuing of besieg'd *Chatillion*
(Where hauing first constraind the French to fly,
And following hard on their confusio[n])
Comes (lo) incountred with a strong supply
Of fresh-arriuing powers, that backe thrust-on
Those flying troupes, another chaunce to trie :
Who, double arm'd, with shame, and fury, straine
To wreake their foyle, and win their fame againe.

80

Which seeing, th'vndaunted *Talbot* (with more might
Of spirit to will, then hands of power to do)
Preparing t'entertaine a glorious fight,
Cheeres vp his wearied Souldiers thereunto.
" Courage, sayth hee : those brauning troupes, in fight,
" Are but the fame, that now you did vndo.
" And what if there be come some more then they ?
" They come to bring more glory to the day.

81

" Which day must either thrust vs out of all ;
 " Or all, with greater glorie, backe restore.
 " This day, your valiant worth aduenture shall,
 " For what our Land shall neuer fight for, more.
 " If now we faile, with vs is like to fall
 " All that renowne which we haue got before.
 " This is the last : if we discharge the same,
 " The same shall last to our eternall fame.

82

" Neuer had worthy men, for any fact,
 " A more faire glorious Theater, then we ;
 " Whereon true Magnanimitie might act
 " Braue deedes, which better witnessēd could be.
 " For, lo, from yonder Turrets, yet vnsackt,
 " Your valliant fellowes stand, your worth to see,
 " T'auouch your valour, if you liue to gaine ;
 " And if we die, that we di'd not in vaine.

83

" And euen our foes (whose proud and powreful might
 " Would feeme to swallow vp our dignitie)
 " Shall not keep-backe the glory of our right ;
 " Which their confounded blood shall testifie :
 " For, in their wounds, our goarie swords shall write
 " The monumentes of our eternitie :
 " For, vile is honor, and a title vaine,
 " The which, true worth and danger do not gaine.

84

' For, they shall see, when we (in carelesse fort)
 ' Shall throwe our felues on their despised speares,
 " Tis not despaire, that doth vs so transport :
 " But euen true Fortitude, that nothing feares ;
 " Sith we may well retire vs, in some fort :
 " But, shame on him that such a foul thought beares.
 " For, be they more, let Fortune take their part,
 " Wee'll tugge her too, and scratch her, ere we part.

85

This sayd ; a fresh infus'd desire of fame
 Enters their warmed blood, with such a will,
 That they deem'd long, they were not at the game ;
 And, though they marcht apace, thought they stood still,
 And that their lingring foes too slowely came
 To ioyne with them, spending much time but ill :
 Such force had wordes, fierce humors vp to call,
 Sent from the mouth of such a Generall.

86

Who yet, his forces weighing (with their fire)
 Turnes him about, in priuate, to his Sonne
 (A worthy Sonne, and worthy such a Sire)
 And telleth him, what ground hee stood vpon,
 Aduising him in secret to retire¹ ;
 Considering how his youth, but now begun,
 Would make it vnto him, at all, no staine :
 His death small fame, his flight no shame could gaine.

¹ The Lord Lifle was aduised by his father to retire him out of the battaile.

St. 85, l. 6, 'So' !

St. 86, l. 1, 'weighing yet his force and their desire' ^{1, 2, 3} : l. 4, 'Tells him the doubtful ground they' ^{1, 2, 3} : l. 6, 'Seeing his youth but euen' ^{1, 2, 3}.

To whom, th'aggrieued Sonne (as if disgrac't)
 " Ah Father, haue you then selected me
 ' To be the man, whom you would haue displac't
 " Out of the roule of Immortalitie ?
 " What haue I done this day, that hath defac't
 " My worth, that my hands worke despis'd should be ?
 " God shield, I should beare home a Cowards name,
 " He long enough hath liv'd, who dyes with fame.

At which, the Father, toucht with sorrowing-joy,
 Turnd him about (shaking his head) and fayes ;
 " O my deare Sonne, worthy a better day,
 " To enter thy first youth, in hard assayes.
 And now had Wrath, impatient of delay,
 Begun the fight, and farther speeches stayes :
 Furie thrustes on ; striuing, whose sword shoulde be
 First warmed, in the wounds of th'enemie.

Hotly, these small but mightie-minded, Bands
 (As if ambitious now of death) doe straine
 Against innumerable armed hands,
 And gloriously a wondrous fight maintaine ;
 Rushing on all what-euer strength withstands,
 Whetting their wrath on blood, and on difdaine :
 And so far thrust, that hard 'twere to descry
 Whether they more desire to kill, or dye.

St. 87, l. 8, ' I haue liu'd enough if I can die with ' ; , .

90

Frank of their owne, greedy of others blood,
 No stroke they giue, but wounds, no wound, but kills :
 Neere to their hate, close to their work they stood,
 Hit where they would, their hand obeys their wills ;
 Scorning the blowe from far, that doth no good,
 Loathing the cracke, vnlesse some blood it spils :
 No wounds could let-out life that wrath held in,
 Till others wounds, reueng'd, did first begin.

91

So much, true resolution wrought in those
 Who had made couenant with death before,
 That their smal number (scorning so great foes)
 Made *Fraunce* most happie, that there were no more ;
 And Fortune doubt to whom she might dispose
 That weary day ; or vnto whom restore
 The glory of a Conquest dearely bought ;
 Which scarce the Conqueror could thinke well got.

92

For, as with equall rage, and equall might,
 Two aduerse windes combat, with billowes proud,
 And neither yeeld ; Seas, skies maintaine like fight,
 Waue against waue oppof'd, and cloud to cloud :
 So warre both sides, with obstinate despight,
 With like reuenge, and neither partie bow'd ;
 Fronting each other with confounding blowes,
 No wound, one sword, vnto the other owes :

St. 91, l. 5, 'Sith these made doubtful how Fate would' ¹, ²; in ² 'So working, that Fate knew not how dispose': l. 8, 'ought' ¹ : ², ² as text.

93

Whil'st *Talbot* (whose fresh ardor hauing got
 A meruailous aduantage of his yeares)
 Carries his vnfelt age, as if forgot,
 Whirling about, where any need appereas :
 His hand, his eye, his wits all present, wrought
 The function of the glorious Part he beares :
 Now vrging here, now cheering there, he flyes,
 Vnlockes the thickest troupes, where most force lyes.

94

In midst of wrath, of wounds, of blood, and death,
 There is he most, where as he may do best :
 And there the closest ranks hee seuereth,
 Driues-back the stoutest powres, that forward prest :
 There makes his sword his way : there laboreth
 Th'infatigable hand that neuer ceast ;
 Scorning, vnto his mortall wounds to yeeld ;
 Till Death became best maister of the Field.¹

95

Then like a sturdy Oke, that hauing long,
 Against the warres of fiercest windes, made head
 When (with some forc't tempestuous rage, more strong)
 His down-borne top comes ouer-maistered,
 All the neere bordering Trees (hee stood among)
 Crusht with his waightie fall, lie ruined :
 So lay his spoyles, all round about him flaine,
 T'adorne his death, that could not die in vaine.

¹ The death of Iohn L. Talbot E. of Shrewesburie ; who had serued in
 the warres of Fraunce most valiantly for the space of 50. yeeres.
 St. 94, l. 6, 'rest'.

96

On th'other part, his most all-daring sonne
 (Although the inexperience of his yeares
 Made him lesse skil'd in what was to be done ;
 And yet did carrie him beyond all feares)
 Into the maine Battalions, thrusting on
 Neere to the King, amidst the chiefeſt Peeres,
 With thousand wounds, became at length opprefte ;
 As if he ſcorn'd to die, but with the beſt.¹

97

Who thus both, hauing gaind a glorious end,
 Soone ended that great day ; that fet ſo red,
 As all the purple Plaines, that wide extend,
 A ſad tempeſtuous ſeafon witneſſed.
 So much adoe had toyling *Fraunce* to rend,
 From vs, the right ſo long inherited :
 And ſo hard went we from what we poſſeſt ;
 As with it went the blood wee loued beſt.²

98

Which blood, not loſt, but fast lay'd vp with heed
 In euerlaſting fame, is there held deere,
 To ſeale the memorie of this dayes deed ;
 Th'eternall euidence of what we were :
 To which, our Fathers, wee, and who ſucceſſed,
 Doe owe a ſigh, for that it toucht vs neere :
 Nor muſt we finne ſo muſch, as to neglect
 The holy thought of ſuch a deare reſpect.

St. 96, l. 5, ' Flying into the maine Batalion '.

St. 98, l. 7, ' Who muſt not ' ¹, ².

¹ The death of the L. Lifle, Sonne to this worthy E. of Shrewesburie.

² 1453. An. reg. 32. Thus was the Duchie of Aquitaine loſt ; which

99

Yet happy-haples day, blest ill-lost breath,
 Both for our better fortune, and your owne !
 For, what foul wounds, what spoyl, what shamefull death,
 Had by this forward resolution growne,
 If at S. Albons, *Wakefield, Barnet-heath,*
 It should vnto your infamie beene showne ?
 Blest you, that did not teach how great a fault
 Euen Virtue is, in actions that are naught.

100

Yet, would this sad dayes losse had now beene all,
 That this day lost : then should we not much plaine,
 If hereby we had com'n but there to fall ;
 And that day, ended, ended had our paine :
 Then small the losse of *Fraunce*, of *Guien* small ;
 Nothing the shame to be turn'd home againe
 Compar'd with other shames. But now, *Fraunce*, lost,
 Sheds vs more blood, then all her winning cost.

101

For losing warre abroad, at home lost peace ;
 Be'ing with our vnsupporting felues close pent ;
 And no dessignes for pride (that did increase)
 But our owne throats, and our owne punishment ;
 The working spirit ceast not, though work did cease,
 Hauing fit time to practise discontent,

had remained in the possession of the Crown of England, by the space almost of 300 years. The right whereof came by the mariage of K. Hen. 2. with Elenor, daughter to Willia D. of Aquitaine. In this Duchie, are 4. Archbishops, 24. Bishops, 50. Earledomes, 202. Baronies, and aboue a 1000. Captainshipes, and Bayliwikes.

St. 100, l. 3, 'come'.

And stirre vp such as could not long lie still :
 " Who, not employ'd to good, must needes do ill.

102

And now this grieve of our receiued shame,
 Gau fit occasion, for ambitious care,
 To draw the chiefe reproche of all the same
 On such as obuious vnto hatred are,
 Th'espaciall men of State : who, all the blame
 Of whatsoeuer Fortune doth, must beare.
 For, still, in vulgar eares delight it breeds,
 To haue the hated, authors of misdeeds.

103

And therefore, easilly, great *Sommerfet*
 (Whom Enuie long had singled out before)
 With all the vollie of disgraces met,
 As th'onely marke that Fortune plac't therfore :
 On whose ill-wrought opinion, Spight did whet
 The edge of Wrath, to make it pearce the more .
 And Grief was glad t'haue gotten now on whom
 To lay the fault of what must light on some.

104

Whereon, th'againe out-breaking *Yorke* beginnes
 To build new modules of his old desire.
 And fe'ing the booty Fortune for him winnes,
 Vpon the ground of this inkindled ire,

St. 102, l. 3, 'They': l. 4, ' . . . naturally hated': l. 5, 'Seeing them apt to beare the greatest blame': l. 6, 'That offices of greatest enuie beare': l. 7, 'And that'.

St. 103, l. 4, 'the maine marke Fortune had': l. 5, 'hard': l. 7, 'Griefe being'.

He takes th'aduantages of others finnes
 To ayde his owne, and help him to aspire :¹
 For, doubting, peace should better scanne deeds past,
 He thinkes not safe, to haue his sword out, last :

105

Espcially, since euery man (now prest
 To innouation) doe with rancor swell :
 A stirring humor gen'rally possest
 Those peace-spilt times, weary of beeing well :
 The weake with wrongs, the happy tyr'd with rest,
 And many mad, for what, they could not tell :
 The World, euen great with Change, thought it vvent
 To stay beyond the bearing-time, so long. [wrong]

106

And therefore now these Lords confedered
 (Beeing much increast in number and in spight)
 So shap't their course, that gathering to a head,
 They grew to be of formidable might :
 The abused world, so hastily is led
 (Some for reuenge, some for wealth, some for delight)

¹ Yorke procures the hatred of the people, against the Duke of Sommer-set : and so wrought (in a time of the Kings sicknes) that hee caused him to be arrested in the Qu. great Châber, and sent to the Towre of Lôdon ; accusing him to haue been the occasiô of the losse of France : but the K. being recovered, he was againe set at liberty, Ann. reg. 32. The D. of Yorke, perciuing his accusations not to preuaile against the D. of Som. resolues to obtaine his purpose by open war : and so being in Wales, accompanied with his special friëds, assëbled an Armie, & marched towards Londô.

St. 104, l. 5, 'Taking' : l. 7, 'And' !.

St. 105, l. 1, 'fith' !.

St. 106, l. 4, 'Began to grow . . . feareful' ¹, ², ³ : l. 5, 'hastie gathered' ¹, ², ³.

That *Yorke*, from small beginning troupes, soone drawes
A world of men, to venture in his Cause.

107

Like as proud *Seuerne*, from a priuat head,
With humble streames at first, doth gently glide,
Till other Riuers haue contributed
The springing riches of their store beside ;
Where-with at length high-swelling, she doth spread,
Her broad-diftended waters, lay'd so wide,
That comming to the Sea, shee seemes, from farre,
Not to haue tribute brought, but rather warre :

108

Euen so is *Yorke* now growne, and now is bent
T'incounter with the best, and for the best.
Whose neere approach the King hastes to preuent,
With hope, farre off to haue his power suppreſt¹ ;
Fearing the Cittie, leaſt ſome iſolent,
And mutinous, ſhould harten on the reſt
To take his part. But hee ſo forward fet
That at S. *Albones* both the Armies met.

109

Where-to, their hafte farre fewer hands did bring,
Then elſe their better leyfure would haue done :
And yet too many for ſo foul a thing ;
Sith who did best, hath but diſhonour won :

¹ K. Hen. ſets forward frō Londō with 20000 mē of war, to encoūter with the D. of Yorke ; attended with Humf. D. of Buckingh. and Humfry his ſon, E. Stafford, Edm. D. of Sōmerf. Hen. Percy, E. of North. Ia. Butler. E. of Wiltfh. & Ormond, Iasper, E. of Pembroke, the ſonne of Owen Tewder, halfe brother to the K. Tho. Courtney, E. of Deuonfh. Ioh. L. Clifford, the LL. Sudley, Barnes, Rofs, & others.

St. 107, l. 6, 'diſcended' : ¹ : ², ³ as text. St. 108, l. 7, 'h'is' !.

St. 109, l. 1, 'Whether' ¹, ², ³.

For, whil'st some offer peace, sent from the King,
Warwicks too forward hand hath Warre begon ;
 A warre, that doth the face of Warre deform :
 Which still is foul ; but soulest, wanting forme.

I I O

And, neuer valiant Leaders (so well knowne
 For braue performed actions done before)
 Did blemish their discretion and renowne
 In any weake effected seruice more ;
 Bringing such powres into so straight a Towne,
 As to some Citty-tumult or vp-rose :
 Which, slaughter, and no battaile, might be thought ;
 Sith that side vf'd their swords, and this their throat.¹

I I I

But this, on th'error of the King, is lai'd,
 And vpon *Sommersets* desire t'obtaine

¹ The D. of York, with the LL. pitched their battaile without the towne, in a place called Keyfield : and the K. power (to their great difadantage) tooke vp the towne : where being assailed, & wanting roome to vfe their power, were miserably ouerthrowne & slaughtered. On the K. side were slain Edm. D. of Sommers. who left behind him 3 sons, Henry, Edm. & Ioh. Heere was also slaine, the E. of Northüberland, the E. Stafford, the L. Clifford, Sir Rob. Vere, with diuers others to the nûber of 5000 : & on the LL. part, but 600. And this was the first battell at S. Albones, the 23 of May, Ann. reg. 33. The D. of Yorke, with other LL. came to the K where hee was, and craued grace & forgiuenesse on their knees, of that that they had done in his presence, intending nothing but for the good of him and his kingdome : with whô they remooued to London ; concluding there to hold a Parliament the 9 of Iuly following.

St. 110, l. 1, 'Neuer did', 'Blemish the reputation of renowne' !.

St. 111, l. 1, 'Warwicks wrath must needs be' ! :

The day with peace : for which they longer staid
 Then wifedome would, aduent'ring for the Maine :
 Whose force, in narrow streets once ouer-laid,
 Neuer recouerd head : but euen there slaine
 The Duke and all the greatest Leaders are ;
 The King himselfe beeing taken prisoner.

112

Yet not a prisoner to the outward eye,
 For-that he must feeme grac't with his lost day ;
 All things beeing done for his commoditie,
 Against such men as did the State betray :
 For, with such apt deceiuing clemencie
 And seeming-order, *Yorke* did so allay
 That touch of wrong, as made him make great stealth
 In weaker minds, with shew of Common-wealth.

113

Long-lookt-for powre thus got into his hand,
 The former face of Court doth new appeare :
 And all th'espaciall Charges of Commaund,
 To his partakers distributed were¹ :
 Himselfe is made Protector of the Land.
 A title found, which couertly did beare
 All-working powre vnder another stile ;
 And yet the soueraigne Part doth act the while.

¹ Ric. E. of Salisbury, made L. Chancelor, & the E. of Warwicke, Gouernour of Calice.

St. 111, l. 4, ' . . . or then was for his gayne ' : l. 6, 'there came ' : l. 7, ' Both he, and all the Leaders els besides ' : l. 8, 'alone a prisoner bides '.

St. 112, l. 1, 'A prisoner, though not ', ' .

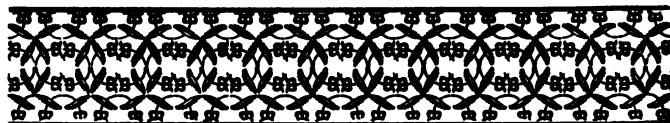
St. 113, l. 2, 'now altered ' : l. 3, 'all the supreamest ' : l. 4, ' Were to his ayders straight contributed ' : l. 6, 'only couered ' : l. 8, ' Which yet the greatest part '.

114

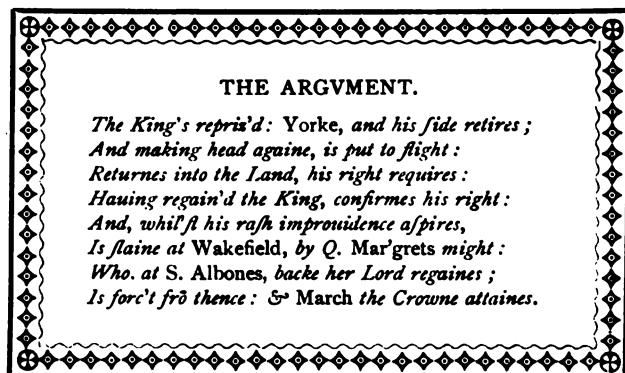
The King held onely but an emptie name,
Left, with his life : whereof the prooфе was such,
As sharpest pride could not transpearce the same,
Nor all-desiring greedinesse durft touch :
Impietie had not inlarg'd their shame
As yet so wide, as to attempt so much :
Mischiefe was not full ripe, for such foul deedes ;
Left, for th'vnbounded malice that succedes.

St. 114, l. 4, 'once, all-seeking' Fortune durft to '¹; ², ³ as text : l. 7,
'deede' '¹; ², ³ as text : l. 8, 'horrors that succeed' '¹; ², ³ as text.

The end of the Sixt Booke.



THE SEVENTH BOOKE.¹



I



Ifordinate Authoritie, thus gaind,
Knew not at first, or durst not to
proceed
With an out-breaking course ; but
stood restraint
Within the compasse of respectiue
heed :

¹ The 'Seuenth Booke' as 'Booke Sixt' appeared first in 1601-2.
St. 1, L. 1, 'Vnaturall', ².

Distrust of friends, and powre of foes, detaind
 That mounting will, from making too much speed :
 For, though he held the powre he longd to win,
 Yet had not all the keyes to let him in.¹

2

The Queene abroad, with a reuenging hand
 (Arm'd with her owne disgrace, and others spight,
 Gath'ring th'oppreſſed partie of the Land)
 Held ouer him the threatning fword of might ;
 That forc't him, in the tearmes of awe, to stand
 (Who else had burst-vp Right, to come t'his right)
 And kept him so confus'd, that he knew not
 To make vſe of the meanes, which he had got.

3

For, either by his fearing to restraine
 The perſon of the King ; or by neglect
 Of guarding him with a ſufficient traine,
 The watchfull Queene, with cunning, doth effect
 A practice that recouers him againe ,
 (As one that with beſt care could him protecť :)
 And h'is conuaid to *Couentry*, to thoſe
 Who well knew how or Maieſtie diſpoſe.

¹ The D. of York, in ſepect that K. Hen. for his holineſſ of life, and clemencie, vvas highly eſteemed of the Commons, durſt not attept any violēt course againſt his perſon : but onely labors to ſtrengthen his owne partie : which he could not do, but by the oppreſſion and diſplacing of many woorthy men ; with committing other violencies. whervnto neceſſitie inforced him, for the preſeruent of his friends, which raifd a greater partie againſt him, then that he made.

St. 3, l. 1, 'whether by not daring to retaine' ², ³ : l. 3, 'whom he held weake or vaine' ², ³ : l. 4, 'Or that the' ², ³

4

Though this weake King had blunted thus before
 The edge of powre, with so dull clemencie,
 And left him nothing else was gracious, more
 Then euen the title of his Sovraintie ;
 Yet is that title of so precious store,
 As it makes, golden, leaden Maiestie :
 And where, or how-foeuer it doth sit,
 Is sure t'haue the world attend on it.

5

Whether it be, that Forme, and Eminence,
 Adorn'd with Pomp and State, begets this awe :
 Or, whether an in-bred obedience
 To Right and Powre, doth our affections drawe :
 Or, whether sacred Kings worke reuerence,
 And make that Nature now, which was first Law,
 We know not : but, the Head will draw the Parts ;
 And good Kings, with our bodies, haue our harts.

6

For, lo, no sooner was his person ioyn'd
 With this distracted body of his friends ;
 But, straight the Duke, and all that faction find,
 They lost the onely Engin for their ends :
 Authoritie, with Maiestie combin'd,
 Stands bent vpon them now, and powrefull sends
 Them summons to appeare, who lately held
 That powre themselues, and could not be compeld.

St. 4, l. 1, 'For though this feeble King had blunted thus' ^{1, 2}: l.
 ends 'gracious' ^{2, 3}: l. 4, 'But' ^{2, 3}: l. 5 ends 'precious' ^{2, 3}.

St. 5, l. 7, 'Or what it is' ^{2, 3}: l. 8, 'And with . . . Kings' ^{2, 3}.

St. 6, l. 7, 'summons for' ^{2, 3}.

7

Where-with confus'd, as either not prepar'd
 For all euent ; or se'ing the times not fit ;
 Or mens affections, failing in regard ;
 Or their owne forces, not of powre as yet :
 They all retire them home ; and neither dar'd
 T'appeare, or to stand-out to answere it :¹
 This vnfore-thought-on accident, confounds
 All their dessignes, and frustrates all their grounds :

8

As vsually it fares, with those that plot
 These machines of Ambition, and high pride ;
 Who (in their chiefest counsels ouer-shot)
 For all things saue what serue the turne, prouide ;
 Whil'st that, which most imports, rests most forgot,
 Or waigh'd not, or contemn'd, or vndescri'd ;
 That some-thing may be euer ouer-gone,
 Where courses shall be crost, and men vndone.

9

Yorke into *Wales*, *Warwicke* to *Calais* hies,
 Some to the *North*, others to other parts ;
 As if they ran both from their dignities,
 And also from themselues, and their owne harts :

¹ The Queen, with her party, hauing recovered the K. and withdrawing him far frō Lon. (where they foud the D. of Yorke was too much fauored by the Cittizens) grew to bee very strong, by means that so many Ll. and much people, oppressed & discontented with these proceedings of their enemies, refforted dailie vnto thē. Whervpon, the K. fōmoned the D. & his adherents, to appeare before him at Couentry : but they, finding their present strength, not sufficient to make good their answer, retired theselues into feuerall parts. The D. of York withdrawes him to Wigmore, in Wales : the E. of Salisb. into the North, the E. of Warw. to Calais.

"(The mind decay'd, in publique ieopardies,
 "To th'ill at hand, onely it selfe conuerts)
 That none would thinke, *Yorke*'s hopes, being so neere dry,
 Could euer flowe againe, and fwell so hie.

IO

And yet, for all this ebbing, Chance remaines,
 The spring that feedes that hope (which leaues men last).
 Whom no'affliction so entire restraines,
 But that it may remount, as in times past :
 Though he had lost his place, his powre, his paines ;
 Yet held his loue, his friends, his title fast :
 The whole frame of that fortune could not faile ;
 As that, which hung by more then by one naile.

II

Else might we thinke, what errorr had it bin,
 These parts thus sev'red, not t'haue quite destroy'd ;
 But that they saw it not the way to win.
 Some more dependances there were beside :

After St. 9 comes this :—

IO.

So humble *Rodon*,¹ *Wainfledes* sweete delight,
 That waters *Mountioyes* solitarie rest,
 ✓ Be'ing deckt with fommers heate, shrinkes out of sight
 Downe in his narrow bed, as quite supprest,
 That lately swoyne with forrayne-ayding might,
 Runs boundlesse ouer all, and all posset :
 And now so feeble growne, hath left no more
 Then scarfe sustaynes his variable store.

St. 10, l. 1, 'So now seem'd Yorke : and yet for all remayne's',
 St. 11, l. 2, 'destroyde' ?, ?.

¹ Rodon the Riuver by Wainflead.

Which Age, and Fate, keeps vs from looking in,
 That their true Counsells come not right descri'd ;
 Which, our presumptuous wits must not condem :
 They be'ing not ignorant ; but we, of them.

I 2

For, heere, we looke vpon another Crown,
 An other image of Nobilitie,
 (Which ciuile Discord had not yet brought down
 Vnto a lower range of dignity) ;
 Vpon a Powre as yet not ouer-flowne
 With th'Ocean of all-drowning Sov'raintie.
 These Lords, who thus against their Kings draw swords,
 Taught Kings to come, how to be more then Lords.

I 3

Which well this Queene observ'd ; and therefore sought
 To draw them in, and ruine them with Peace ;
 Whom Force (she saw) more dangerous had wrought,
 And did their powre and malice but increase :
 And therefore, to the Citty hauing got,
 A Counsell was convok't, all iarres to cease :¹

¹ Diuers graue perfons were sent to the D. of York to mediat a reconciliation : and a great Councell was called at London, Ann. reg. 36, to agree all differences : Whither cam the E. of Salif. with 500. men, the D. of Yorke with 400. and was lodged at his houfe, at Bainards Castle. The Dukes of Exeester, and Somerfet, with 800. men, lodged without Temple Bar. The E. of Northû. the LL. Egremôt & Clifford with 1500, & lodged without the Cittie : The E. of Warwick from Calais with 600. men al in his liuery. The L. Mayor kept continuall watch with 2000. men in armor during the treaty. Wher in by the great trauaile & exhortation of the Archbisshop of Canterbury, with other graue Prelates, a reconciliation was concluded, and celebrated with a solêne proceffion (not in ², ³).

St. 13, l. 6, 'Summons a Parlement' ², ³.

Where come these Lords at length ; but yet so strong,
As if to doe, rather then suffer wrong.

14

Here Scottish border broyles, and feares of *Fraunce*,
Vrg'd with the present times necessity,
Brought forth a futtle-shadowed countenance
Of quiet peace, resembling Amitie ;
Wrapt in a strong and curious ordinaunce,
Of many Articles, bound solemnly :
As if thosse *Gordian* knots could be so ti'd,
As no impatient sword could them diuide :

15

Especially, whereas the selfe fame ends
Concur not in a point of like respect ;
But that each party couertly intends
Thereby their owne designments to effect :
Which Peace, with more indangering wounds, offends,
Then Warre can doe ; that stands vpon suspect,
And neuer can be ty'd with other chaine,
Then intermutuall benefite and gaine.

16

As well by this concluded Act is seene :
Which had no power to holde-in minds, out-bent ;
But quickly was dissolv'd and canceld cleene,
Either by *Warwicks* fortune or intent.
How euer vrg'd, the Seruants of the Queene
Assaulted his, as he from Counsell went¹ :
Where, his owne person, egerly pursu'd,
Hardly (by Boate) escap't the multitude.

¹ The E. of Warwicke is set vpon by the Queenes seruants.
St. 15, l. 8, 'mutvall vtilitie' ², ³.

17

Which deed, most heynous made, and vrg'd as his,
 The Queene (who foone th'aduantage apprehends)
 Thought forthwith t'hause committed him on this :
 But, he preuents, flyes North-ward to his friends,
 Shewes them his danger, and what hope there is
 In her, that all their ouerthrowes intends ;
 " And that these drifts, th'effects of this Peace are :
 " Which giues more deadly wounding blowes, then war.

18

Strooke with his heate, began the others fire
 (Kindled with danger, and disdaine) t'inflame :
 Which hauing well prepar'd, to his desire,
 He leaues the farther growing of the same,
 And vnto *Calais* (to his strong retire)
 With speed betakes him, to preuent the fame
 Of his impos'd offence ; least, in disgrace,
 He might be dispossessed of that place.

19

Yorke straight aduif'd the Earle of *Salisbury*,
 T'addresse him to the King : and therewpon,
 With other grieuances, to signifie
 Th'iniurious act committed on his Sonne ;
 And there, to vrge the breach of th'Amitie,
 By these sinister plots to be begun :
 But, he so strongly goes, as men might gheffe,
 He purpos'd not to craue, but make redresse.

St. 19, l. 3, 'As by way of complaint' ; : l. 6, ' To be by these' ; :

20

Whom, the Lord *Audly*, hasting to restraine,
(Sent, with ten thousand men, well furnished)
Encountred on *Blore-heath*; where he is slaine,
And all his powre and force discomfited¹:
Which chaunce, so opened and let-out againe
The hopes of *Yorke* (whom Peace had fettered)
That he resolues, what-euer should befall,
To set vp's Rest, to venture now for all.

21

Fury, vnti'd, and broken out of bands,
Runnes desp'rately presently to either head :
Faction and Warre (that neuer wanted hands
For Bloud and Mischife) soone were furnished :
Affection findes a fide : and out it stands ;
Not by the Cause, but by her int'rest led :
And many, vrging Warre, most forward are ;
" Not that 't is iust, but only that 'tis Warre.

22

Whereby, the Duke is growne t'a mighty head
In *Shropshire*, with his Welsh and Northren ayde :
To whom came *Warwicke*, hauing ordered
His charge at *Calais*; and with him conuay'd
Many braue Leaders, that aduentured
Their fortunes on the fide that he had lay'd :
Whereof as chiese, *Trollop* and *Blunt* excell'd :
But, *Trollop* fayld his friends ; *Blunt* faithfull held.²

¹ James Tuichet L. Audly slaine at Bloreheath and his army discomfited by the E. of Salib. with the losse of 2400. men. An. reg. 38.

² Sir Andrew Trollop, afterwarde fled to the King. John Blunt remainde with the Lords.

St. 21, l. 2, 'headlong' ², ³.

St. 22, l. 8, 'But th'one betrayd their cause' ², ³.

23

The King (prouok't these mischieses to preuent,
Follow'd with *Sommerset* and *Excester*)
Strongly appointed, all his forces bent,
Their malice to correct or to deterre :
And, drawing neere, a reuerent Prelate sent
To proffer pardon,¹ if they would referre
Their Caufe to Peace ; as being a cleaner course
Vnto their ends, then this foule barb'rous force.

24

“ For, what a warre, sayd he, is here begun,
“ Where euen the victory is held accurst ?
“ And who so winnes, it will be so ill won,
“ That though he haue the best, he speeds the worst.
“ For, here your making, is, to be vndon ;
“ Seeking t'obtaine the State, you lose it first :
“ Both sides being one, the blood consum'd all one ;
“ To make it yours, you worke to haue it none.

25

“ Leauue then with this, though this be yet a staine
“ T'attempt this finne, to be so neere a fall.
“ The doubtfull Dye of warre, cast at the Maine,
“ Is such, as one bad chaunce may lose you all.
“ A certaine finne, seekes an vncertaine gaine :
“ Which, got, your felues euen wayle and pitty shall.
“ No way, but Peace, leades out from blood and feares ;
“ To free your felues, the Land, and vs, from teares.

¹ The King, beeing at Worcester, sends the B. of Salisbury to the LL. to induce them to peace, & to offer pardon.

St. 23, l. 5, ‘ And neere them came’ ², ².

26

Whereto the discontented part replies ;
 " That they, hereto by others wrongs inforc't,
 " Had no way else but these extremities,
 " And worst meanes of redresse, t'auoide the worst.
 " For, fince that peace did but their spoyles deuife,
 " And held them out from grace (as men diuorc't
 " From th'honors, that their fortunes did afford)
 " Better die with the sword, then by the sword.

27

" For, if pactis, vowes, or oaths, could haue done ought,
 " There had enough been done : but, to no end
 " Saue to their ruine, who had ever fought
 " To auoide these broyls, as grieuing to contend ;
 " Smothring disgraces, drawing to parts remote,
 " As exil'd men : where now they were, to attend
 " His Grace with all respect, and reuerence ;
 " Not with the sword of malice, but defence.

28

Whereby, they shewed, that words were not to win :
 But yet the Pardon works so feelingly,¹
 That to the King, that very night, came-in
Sir Andrew Trollop, with some company,
 Contented to redeeme his finne with finne ;
 Disloyalty, with infidelitie :
 And, by this meanes, became discouered quite
 All th'orders of th'intended next dayes fight.

¹ The Bishop of Salisbury offred pardon, to all such as would submit themselues.

St. 28, l. 2, 'f'effectually ';

29

Which so much wrought vpon their weakened feares,
 That presently their Campe brake vp, ere day :
 And euery man with all his speed prepares,
 According to their course, to shifft their way.
Yorke, with his youngest Sonne, tow'ards *Ireland* beares¹ ;
Warwicke to *Calais*, where his safetey lay ;
 To that sure harbor of conspiracie,
 Enuies Retreit, Rebellions nursery.

30

Which fatall place, seemes that with either hand
 Is made t'offend.² For, *Fraunce* sh'afflicts with th'one :
 And with the other, did infest this Land ;
 As if ordained to doe good to none :
 But, as a Gate to both our ills did stand,
 To let-out plagues on vs, and int'her owne :
 A part without vs, that small good hath bin
 But to keepe, lesse intire, the whole within.

31

And there, as in their all and best support,
 Is *Warwicke* got, with *March* and *Salfbury* ;
 When all the Gates of *England*, euery Port
 And Shore close-shut, debarres their reentry ;
 Lockt out from all ; and all left in that sort,
 As no meanes seemes can ayde their misery.
 This wound, giuen without blowe, weakens them more,
 Then all their losse of blood had done before.

¹ The D. of York, with his youngest sonne the E. of Rutland, withdrew him into Ireland where he was exceedingly beloved.

² The inconueniences of Calais at that time.

St. 30, l. 2, 'Sh'is made' ², ³: l. 5, no , after 'But,' and in l. 8 no , after 'keepe' in ², ³.

St. 31, l. 4, 'r'entry' ², ³.

32

For, now againe vpon them frowningly
 Stands Powre with Fortune, trampling on their States ;
 And brands them with the markes of Infamy ;
 Rebellions, Treasons, and Assassinats ;
 Attaints their Bloud, in all Posteritie ;
 Ransacks their Lands, spoiles their Confederats ;
 And layes so hideous colours on their crimes,
 As would haue terrified more timorous times.

33

But, heere could doe no good : for why ? this Age,
 Being in a course of motion, could not rest,
 Vntill the reuolution of their rage
 Came to that poynt, whereto it was addrest.
 Misfortune, crosses, ruine, could not swage
 That heate of hope, or of reuenge, at least.
 " The World, once set a-worke, cannot soone cease :
 " Nor euer is the same, it is in peace.

34

For, other motions, other int'rests heere,
 The acting spirits vp and awake doe keepe :
 " Faith, friendship, honour is more sure, more deere,
 " And more it selfe, then when it is asleepe :
 Worth will stand-out, and doth no shadowes feare :
 Disgraces make impressions far more deepe ;

St. 32 (= 33), l. 1, 'vpon them stands imperiously' ^{2, 3}: l. 2, 'Fortune and Powre, with all the States grace on' ^{2, 3}: l. 4, 'Treason, Conspiracie, Rebellion' ^{2, 3}: l. 5, 'Degrades, deprives them of abilitie' ^{2, 3}: l. 6, 'B'attayndor and by confiscation' ^{2, 3}: l. 7, 'sets a hidious face vpon' ^{2, 3}: l. 8, 'Which' ^{2, 3}.

St. 34, l. 1, 'Other occasions' ²: l. 6, 'Disgrace receiuers' ².

When Ease, ere it will stirre, or breake her rest,
Lyes still, beares all, content to be opprest.

35

Yorke, and his side, could not, while life remain'd,
Though thus disperst, but worke and interdeale :
Nor any sword, at home, could keepe restrain'd
Th'out-breaking powres of this innated zeale.
This humor had so large a passage gain'd,
On th'inward body of the Common-weale ;
That 'twas impossible to stop, by force,
This current of affection's violent course.

36

Yet they at home (disorder to keepe forth)
Did all what powre could doe, or wit inuent ;
Plac't, in th'auoided roomes, men of great worth ;
Young *Sommerſet*, with strength to *Calais* ſent¹ ;
Northumberland and *Clifford* to the North ;
(Whereof They onely had the gouernment)
Defend all landings, barre all paſſages,
Striue to redrefſe the publique grieuances :

37

And, to this end, ſummon a Parlement² :
Wherein, when-as the godly King would not,

St. 34, l. 7, 'rather then firre' ³.

St. 36, l. 1, 'Yet they at home all their beſt meaneſ brought forth' ³ : l. 2,
'Diſordred broyles t'appeafe or to preuent' ³ : l. 4, 'Great Sommerſet' ³.
St. 37, l. 1, 'ſummons' ³.

¹ Hen. the young D. of Sommerſ. was, in An. reg. 37, made Captain of Calais, & a priuie feal ſent to the E. of Warwicke, to diſcharge him of that place : who, in respect he was made Captaine there by Parliament, wou'd not obey the priuie feale.

² The Parliament at Couentry.

Vnto th'attainder of the Lords, consent ;
 The Queene in grieve (and in her pasions hot)
 Breakes out in speech, louingly violent :
 " And what (faith shee) my Lord, haue you forgot
 " To rule and be a King ? Why will you thus
 " Be milde to them, and cruell vnto vs ?

38

" What good haue you procur'd by clemencie,
 " But giuen to wilde presumption much more head ?
 " And now what cure, what other remedie
 " Can to our desp'rat wounds be ministred ?
 " Men are not good, but for neceffitie ;
 " Nor orderly are euer borne, but bred.
 " Sad want, and pouertie, makes men industrios :
 " But, Law must make them good, and feare obsequious.

39

" My Lord ; Hee gouerns well, that's well obayd :
 " And temp'rat Rigour euer safely sits.
 " For, as to him, who *Cotis* did vpbraid,
 " And call'd his rigor, madnesse, raging fits ;
 " Content thee, thou vnskilfull man, he said,
 " My madnesse keepes my Subiects in their wits :
 " So, to like course my Lord, y'are forc't to fall ;
 " Or else you must, in th'end, vndoe vs all.

40

" Looke but, I pray, on this deare part of you ;
 " This branch (sprung frō your blood) your owne aspect :
 " Looke on this Childe, and think what shal ensue
 " To this faire hope of ours, by your neglect.
 " Though you respect not vs, wrong not his due,

¹ Cotis. a Tyrant of Thrace.

“ That must his right, left you, from you expect ;
 “ The right of the renowned *Lancasters*,
 “ His fathers fathers, and great grand-fathers.

41

“ Then turnes t' her sonne : O sonne! dost thou not see ?
 “ He is not mov'd, nor toucht, nor weighes our teares.
 “ What shall I doe ? What hope is left for me,
 “ When he wants will to help, & thou wantst yeares ?
 “ Could yet these hands of thine but partners bee
 “ In these my labours, to keep-out our feares,
 “ How well were I ? that now alone must toile,
 “ And turne, and tosse ; and yet vndone the while.

42

“ I knowe, if thou could'st helpe, thy mother thus
 “ Should not beyond her strength endure so much ;
 “ Nor these proud Rebels, that would ruine vs,
 “ Scape with their hainous treasons, without touch :
 “ I knowe, thou would'st conceiue how dangerous
 “ Mercy were vnto those, whose hopes are fuch ;
 “ And not preferue, whom Law hath ouer-thrown,
 “ Sauing their liuely-hood, to lose our owne.

43

“ But, sith thou canst not, nor I able am,
 “ Thou must no more expect of me, deare Son ;
 “ Nor yet, in time to come, thy Mother blame,
 “ If thou, by others weakenesse be vndon.
 “ The world, with me, must testifie the same,
 “ That I haue done my best, what could be done ;

St. 40, l. 7, ‘renowmed’². St. 41, l. 8, ‘b'vndone’³.
 St. 43, l. 4, ‘since’⁴.

" And haue not fail'd, with hazard of my life,
 " The duetie of a mother and a wife.

44

" But well ; I see which way the world will goe :
 " And let it goe : and so turnes her about,
 Full, with stout grieve, and with disdainefull woe ;
 Which, now, her words shut vp, her lookes let-out,
 The cast of her side-bended eye, did shewe
 Both sorrow and reproose ; se'ing so great doubt,
 And no powre to redresse, but stand and vex,
 Imprisoned in the fetters of her sex.

45

Yet, so much wrought these mouing arguments
 (Drawne from that blood, where Nature vrg'd her Right)
 As his all-vpward tending zeale relents ;
 And, downward to his State, declines his fight :
 And so, to their Attainders he consents¹ ;
 Prouided, He, on their submision, might
 Out of his Princely powre, in his owne name,
 Without a Parlement, reuoke the same.

¹ At this Parliament at Couentry, in the yeere 1459, in the 38 of Hen. 6. is Ric. D. of Yorke, with his son Edw. and all his posteritie, and partakers, attainted, to the ninth degree, their goods and possessiōes escheated, their tenants spoiled of their goods, the Towne of Ludlom partaining to the D. of Yorke ransackt, and the Dutches of Yorke spoyled of her goods. Henrie D. of Sommerfet with the LL. Audly, and Rosse attempted the towne of Calais, but were repulst ; his people yeelding theselues to the E. of War, and himselfe hardly escaped. [The words "and partakers" are omitted, and the note closes at "ninth degree".]

St. 45, l. 2, 'Nature ought stand vpon' : l. 4, 'Looke somewhat downe t' a selfe tuition' : l. 6, 'As that himselfe, on their submision' : l. 7, 'Might by his,' etc., .

46

Whil'st *Sommerſet* with maine endeuour lay
 To get his giuen (but vngot) gouernment,
 The stout *Califians* (bent another way)
 Fiercely repell him, frustrate his intent :
 Yet takes he *Guines*, landing at *VVhitſandbay* :
 Where-as the fwordes, hee brought, would not consent
 To wound his foes : the fight no rancor hath :
 Malice was friends : and Warre was without wrath.

47

Though hee their hands, yet *VVarwicke* had their
 To whom, both men and ſhipping they betray'd ; [hearts :
 Whilſt *Englands* (though debarred) ſhore imparts,
 To him, her other-where intended ayde :
 For, the Lord *Riuers*, paſſing to those parts,
 T'haue fresh ſupplies vnto the Duke conuay'd ¹ ;
 At *Sandwich*, with his Sonne accompayned,
 Staying for winde, was taken in his bed.

48

Whofe ſhipping, and prouifions, *VVarwicke* takes
 For *Ireland*, with his Chieftaine to conferre ² :
 And within thirtie dayes this voyage makes,
 And backe-returns, ere knowne to haue beene there :
 So that the heauens, the ſea, the winde partakes
 With him ; as if they of his faction were ;
 Or that his ſpirit and valour were combin'd,
 With destinie, t'effect what he design'd.

¹ The L. Riuers, and his ſonne Sir Anthony Wooduill, were taken by Iohn Dinham, at Sandwich ; whether they were ſent to guard the towne, and ſupply the D. of Sommerſet.

² The E. of Warwick ſayled into Ireland to conferre with the D. of Yorke.

St. 46, l. 4, 'frustrates' ³

49

Which working, though without, and on the shore,
 Reacht yet vnto the centre of the Land ;
 Searcht all thofe humors that were bred before ;
 Shakes the whole frame, whereon the State did stand ;
 " Affection, pittie, fortune, feare being more
 " Farre off and absent, then they are at hand.
 " Pittie becomes a traytor with th'opprest :
 " And many haue beene rayf'd, by being supprest.

50

For, they had left, although themselues were gone,
 Opinion and their memorie behinde.
 Which so preuayles, that nought could here be done,
 But straight was knowne as foone as once design'd :
 Court, Councell-chamber, Closet, all were won,
 To be reuealers of the Princes minde :
 So false is Faction, and so smooth a lyer,
 As that it neuer had a side entire.

51

Whereby, th'exil'd had leasure to preuent,
 And circumuent, what-euer was deuiz'd :
 Which made, that *Faulconbridge*, to *Sandwich* bent,
 That Fortresse and the Gouernour surpriz'd¹ :
 Who, presently from thence to *Calais* sent,
 Had his vnguiltie blood there sacrific'd :
 And *Faulconbridge*, returning backe, relates
 Th'affection here, and zeale of all estates.

¹ The L. Faulconbridge, sent to Sandwich, tooke the Towne and Sir Simon Monfort Gouernor thereof.

St. 50.—This is misnumbered again 49, and so onward.—Corrected. G.
 St. 51, l. 3, 'towards' ².

52

Drawne with which newes, and with a spirit that dar'd
 T'attempt on any likelihood of support ;
 They take th'aduantage of so great regard ;
 Their landing here secur'd them in fuch sort,
 By Faulconbridge ; the fatall bridge prepar'd
 To be the way of blood, and to transport
 Returning furie to make greater wounds
 Then euer *England* saw within her bounds.

53

And but with fifteene hundred men do land,
 Vpon a Land, with many millions stor'd :
 So much, did high-presuming Courage stand
 On th'ayde, home-disobedience would afford.
 Nor were their hopes deceiv'd : for, such a hand
 Had Innouation ready for the sword,
 As ere they neere vnto the Cittie drew,
 Their powre beyond all former greatnesse grew.

54

Muse, what may we imagine was the Cause
 That *Furie* workes thus vniuersally ?
 What humor, what affection, is it, drawes
 Sides, of such powre, to this Nobilitie ?
 Was it their Conscience, to redresse the Lawes ;
 Or malice, to a wrong-plac't Sov'raintie,
 That cauf'd them (more then wealth, or life) desire
 Destruction, ruine, bloud-shed, sword and fire ?

St. 54, l. 1, 'Muse, what shall' : ll. 5-8—

' Was it their eminence who waighd no lawes ?
 Or the as-yet vnstrayn'd vp Sou'raightie,
 Which had this disproportion in the partes
 Of might to draw, diuert, and gouerne hartes ?' .

55

Or was the Powre of Lords (thus inter-plac't
 Betwixt the height of Princes, and the State)
 Th'occasion that the people so imbrac't
 Their actions, and attend on this Debate ?
 Or had their Greatnesse, with their Worth, imbaft
 The Touch of *Royaltie* to so lowe rate,
 As their opinion could such tumults moue ?
 Then Powre, and Virtue, you contagious proue.

56

And *Perianders* leuell'd Eares of Corne
 Shew what is fitteſt for the publique Rest ;
 And that the hyest Minions which adorne
 A *Common-weale* (and doo become it beſt)
 Are *Zeale* and *Inſtice*, *Law*, and *Cuſtomes*, borne
 Of hye deſcent ; that neuer do infest
 The Land with falſe ſuggeſtions, claymes, affrights,
 To make men loſe their owne, for others ri ghts.

St. 55, ll. 1-4—

‘ Or did th’opinion of a powre wrong plac’d
 Cause this infectious ſickneſſe of the State,
 That men rather then wealth, or life, imbrac’d
 Deſtru ction, ruine, bloodſhed and debate ? ’³ :

l. 6, ‘ Virtues, and Maiestie to this ’³ : ll. 7, 8—

‘ Then Virtu’ and Worth you proue contagious,
 And Honour out of Square growes dangerous ’³.

St. 56, l. 1, ‘ Where ’³ : ll. 2-8—

‘ Yeeld Princes ſafetie, and the peoples rest,
 Whilſt next to Kinges are plac’d (kinges to adorne)
 These (as the Minions who are fauored beſt)
 Religion, Law, Statutes, Cuſtomes borne
 Of high diſcent, that neuer do infest
 The land with falſe ſuggeſtions, titles, claymes,
 Nor ſeeke for Crownes, whereat Ambition aymes ’³.

57

But now, against this disproportion, bends
 The feeble King all his best industrie :
 And, from abrode, *Skales, Louell, Kendall*, sends,
 To hold the Cittie in fidelitie¹ ;
 The Cittie, which before (for others ends)
 Was wrought to leaue the part of Royaltie ;
 Where, though the Kings commaund was of no powre ;
 Yet worke these Lords so, that they tooke the Towre :

58

And, from thence, labour to bring-in againe
 The out-let will of disobedience ;
 Send terror, threatnes, intreaties ; but in vaine :
VVarwicke, and *March*, are with all iollitie
 And grace receiv'd.² The Citties loue did gaine
 The best part of a Crowne³ : for whose defence,
 And intertwining still, stayes *Salburie*,⁴
 Whil'ft *March*, and *VVarwicke* other fortunes try ;

59

Conducting their fresh troupes against their King
 (Who leaues a woman to supply his steed) :

¹ The King, from Couentry sendes the L. Skales, the L. Louel, the E. of Kendal to London, with others, to keep the Cittie in obedience.

² The EE. of March, Warwike, and Saliburie, landing at Sandwich, were met by the Archb. of Cant. who with his Crosse borne before him accompayned them to Londō. An. reg. 38.

³ The affection which the Cittie of London bare to the D. of Yorke was an especiall meane for the raysing of that line, to the Crowne.

⁴ The E. of Salisbury left to keep the Cittie.

St. 57, l. 3, 'From Couentry' : l. 6, 'Maiestie' .

St. 58, l. 2, 'disobedience' : l. 4, 'reuerence' : l. 5, 'This place, this loue did gaine' : l. 7, 'And holding still' .

St. 59, l. 1, 'Leading their new got troupes' : l. 2, 'Who had t'a womans care refignd his heed' .

And neere *Northhampton*, both imbattailing,¹
 Made, now, the very heart of *England* bleed :
 Where, what strange resolutions both sides bring :
 And with what deadly rancour they proceed,
 Witnesse the blood there shed, and fowly shed ;
 That cannot, but with sighes, be registred.

60

There, *Buckingham*, *Talbot*, and *Egremont*,
Bewmont, and *Lucy*; parts of *Lancaster*
 (Parts most important, and of chiefe account)
 In this vnhappy day, extinguisht are.²
 There, the Lord *Grey*, (whose fayth did not amount
 Vnto the trust committed to his care)
 Betrayes his King,³ borne to be strangely tost ;
 And, late againe attain'd, againe is lost.⁴

61

Againe is lost this out-side of a King,
 Ordain'd for others vies, not his owne :
 Who, to the part that had him, could but bring
 A feeble body onely, and a Crowne ;
 But yet was held to be the dearest thing
 Both sides did labor-for, so much ; to crowne
 Their Caufe with the apparency of might :
 From whom, and by whom, they must make their Right ;

¹ The Battell of Northhampton.

² The D. of Bucking, the E. of Shrewef. the L. Egremont, Iohn Vicont Bewmont, Sir William Lucy slaine.

³ The L. Edmond Grey of Ruthen who led the Vant-guard of K. Henrie withdrew himself and tooke part with the LL.

⁴ The King is conuaide to London, the Towre yeelded vp to the Lords, and the L. Skales who kept it, is murthred.

St. 61, l. 5, ' Which yet was that they held the only thing ' : l. 6, ' And both sides labord for ' .

62

When he himselfe (as if he nought esteem'd
 The highest Crowne on earth) continues one ;
 Weake to the world : which, his Religion deem'd
 Like to the breath of man ; vaine, and soone gone :
 Whil'st the stout Queene, by speedy flight redeem'd
 The safety of her selfe, and of her Sonne :
 And, with her, *Sommerfet*¹ to *Durham* fled ;
 Her powres, supprest, her heart vnuanquished.

63

So much for absent *Yorke*, is acted here,
 Attending *Englysh* hopes, on th'*Irish* coast.
 Which when, vnlookt-for, they related were,
 Ambition (still on horse-backe) comes in poast,
 And seemes with greater glory to appeare ;
 As made the more, by be'ing so long time lost :
 And to the Parlement with state is led,
 Which his associates had fore-summoned.

64

And, com'n into the Chamber of the Peeres,
 He sets himselfe downe, in the chayre of State :
 Where, such an vnexpected face appeares
 Of an amazed Court, that gazing late
 With a dumbe silence (seeming, that it feares
 The thing it went about t'effectuate)

¹ The D. of Sommerfet.

St. 62, l. 1, 'Whil'st '².

St. 63, l. 2, 'Stay'ng still '³: l. 4, 'Ambition fayles not to be here in
 poast '⁴: l. 5, 'And comes '⁵: l. 6, 'Which seemes to be made more, by
 be'ing long lost '⁶.

St. 64, l. 1, 'come '⁷ : l. 2, 'him . . . Estate '⁸: l. 5, 'as it seemes it
 feares '⁹.

As if the Place, the Causē, the Conscience, gaue
Barres to the words, their forced course should haue.

65

Tis strāge, those times, which brought such hāds for
blood,
Had not bred tongues to make good any side ;
And that no prostituted conscience stood,
Any iniustice to haue iustifi'd
(As men of the forelone hope, onely good
In desperatest acts to be employ'd)
And that none, in th'assembly there was found,
That would t'ambitious descant giue a ground :

66

That euen himselfe (forc't of necessitie)
Must be the Orator of his owne Cause.
For, hauing viewd them all, and could espie
None proffring once to speake (all, in a pause)
On this friend lookes with an inuiting eye,
And then on that (as if he woo'd applaufe)
Holding the cloth of State still in his hand ;
The signe, which he would haue them vnderstand.

67

But se'ing none moue ; with an imperiall port,
Gath'ring his spirits, he ryse from his seat ;
Doth, with such powre of wordes, his Causē support,
As seemes all other Causes to defeat.
" And, sure, who workes his Greatnesse in that sort,
" Must haue more powres, then those that are borne great :
" Such Reuolutions are not wrought, but when
" Those spirits doe worke, which must be more then men.

St. 65, l. 5, 'forelorne'.

St. 67, l. 8, 'Those spirits worke'.

68

He argues first his Right, so long with-held
 By th'vsurpation of the *Lancasters* ;
 " The Right of a direct Line, alwayes held
 " The sacred course of Blood ; our Ancestors,
 " Our Lawes, our reuerent Customes haue vp-held
 " With holy hands. Whence, when disorder erres,
 " What horrors, what confusion, do we see,
 " Vntill it be reduc't where it should bee ?

69

" And how it prospers with this wretched Land,
 " Witnesse the vniuersall miserie,
 " Wherein (as if accurst) the Realme doth stand ;
 " Depriu'd of State, wealth, honor, dignitie ;
 " The Church, and Commons, vnderneath the hand
 " Of violence, extortion, robberie ;
 " No face of order, no respect of Lawes :
 " And thus complaynes of what himselfe is cause ;

70

" Accusing others insolence, that they
 " Exhausted the Reuenues of the Crowne :
 " So that the King was forc't onely to prey
 " Vpon his Subiects, poore and wretched growne)
 " And that they now sought *Ireland* to betray,
 " And *Calais* to the *French* ; which hee had knowne,
 " By th'intercepted notes of their owne hand,
 " Who were the onely Traytors of the Land :

St. 68, l. 8, 'Till it b'againe' ².St. 69. l. 5, 'The Church opprest, the Laytie vnder the hand' ².

71

“ And yet procur’d th’Attaynders most vniust,
 “ Of others guiltlesse and vnspotted blood ;
 “ Who euermore had labour’d, in their trust
 “ And faithfull seruice for their Countries good :
 “ And who with extreame violence were thrust
 “ Quite out of all, spoyl’d of their liuelihood,
 “ Expof’d to all the miseries of life :
 “ Which they indur’d, to put-off blood and strife.

72

“ But since (sayth he) their malice hath no ende,
 “ But t’end vs all, and to vndo the Land :
 “ (For which, the hatefull *French* gladly attend,
 “ And at this instant haue their swords in hand)
 “ And that the God of heauen doth seeme to bend
 “ Vnto our Cause, whereto the best men stand ;
 “ And that this blood of mine, so long time fought,
 “ Reserued seemes, for some thing to be wrought ;

73

“ It rests within your iudgements, to vp-right,
 “ Or else to ruine vtterly the Land.
 “ For, this be sure, I must pursue my Right
 “ Whil’st I haue breath, or I and mine can stand.
 “ Thinke, whether this poore State, being in this plight,
 “ Stands not in need of some vp-rayfing hand :
 “ Or whether ’tis not time we should haue rest,
 “ And this confusion, and our wounds redrest.

St. 71, l. 8, ‘ t’auoyd bloodshed and strife ’².

St. 72, l. 8, ‘ Seemes as referu’d to be for something wrought ’³.

74

This faid, he turnes aside, and out hee goes ;
 Leaues them to counsell what was to be done.
 Where, though the most part gath'red, were of thosse
 Who with no opposition sure would run ;
 Yet some, more temp'rate, offred to propoſe
 That which was fit to bee confidered on :
 Who, though they knew his clayme was faire, in fight ;
 Yet thought, it now lackt the right face of Right ;

75

Since, for the ſpace of three ſcore yceres, the Crowne
 Had beene in act poſſeſt, in three deſcents ;
 Confirm'd by all the Nobles of renoune,
 The peoples ſuffrages, Oathes, Parlements¹ ;
 So many Actes of State, both of our owne,
 And of all other foraine Gouernments :
 " That Wrong, by order, may grow Right by-this ;
 " Sith Right, th'obferuer but of Order is.

76

" And then confidirg, firſt, how *Bullingbrooke*,
 " Landing in *Yorkeſhire* but with three ſcore men,
 " By the conſent of all the Kingdome, tooke
 " The Crowne vpon him, held for lawfull then ;
 " His Vnkle *Yorke* and all the Peeres betooke
 " Themſelues to him, as to their Soueraigne ; when
 " King Richards wrongs, and his propinquitie,
 " Did feeme to make no diſtance in their eye :

¹ *Non confirmatur tractu temporis, quod de iure ab initio non subsiftit.*

St. 74, l. 4, 'Who ſure would make no opposition' ² : l. 6, 'Matter worthy conſideration' ³ : l. 7, 'right' ⁴ : l. 8, 'Yet ſeem'd not now t'hau'e the' ⁵.

St. 75, l. 4, 'Peoples aſſent' ⁶ : l. 8, 'Since' ⁷.

St. 76, l. 6, 'when' omitted' ⁸ : l. 7, 'The others wrongs' ⁹.

77

" Nor was without example, in those dayes :
 " Wherin (as in all Ages) States do take
 " The side of publique Peace, to counterpayse
 " The waight of wrong ; which, time may rightfull make.
 " No elderhood, *Rufus* and *Henrie* stayes,¹
 " The imperiall Crowne of *England* t'vndertake :
 " And *John*, before his nephew *Arthur*, speedes ;
 Whom, though depriv'd, *Henry* his sonne succeeds.²

78

Edward the third, made Sov'raigne of the State,
 Upon his fathers depriuation, was :
 All which, though seeming wrongs, yet fairely late
 In their succeeders, and for right did passe.
 And if they could so worke, t'accommodate,
 And calme the Peeres, and please the Populasse ;
 They wisht, the Crowne might, where it stood, remaine,
 Succeeding inconuenience to restraine.

79

Thus th'auncient Fathers of the Law aduise ;
Graue Baron Thorpe and learned *Fortescue* :
 Who, though they could not fashion, otherwise,
 Those strong-bent humors, which auerfue grew ;
 Yet seem'd to qualifie th'extreamities.
 And some respect more to their Sov'raine drew ;

¹ W. *Rufus* and *Hen.* 1. preferd before their elder brother.

² *Hen.* 3. succeeds in the kingdome after the depriuation of his father, and the election of *Lewes*.

St. 78, l. 1, 'enters vnto the State' : l. 2, 'was' omitted : l. 3, 'rightly' : l. 4, 'In th'after body of succession' : l. 6, 'All thinges to each mans satisfaction' : l. 8, 'Further confused mischieves' .

St. 79, l. 4, 'a way-ward grew' : l. 6, 'And to that godly King some reuerence drew' .

That, during life, it was by all agreed,
He shoulde King, and *Yorke* shoulde him succeed :

80

Which, presently enacted, was (beside)
Proclaym'd through-out with all solemnities ;
And intermutually there ratifi'd
With protestations, vowes and oathes, likewise ;
Built vp, with all the strength of forme, t'abide
What-euer oppositions could aryse ;
And might haue seem'd sure and authenticall,
Had all this bodie of the State beene all.

81

But *Trent*, thou keptst a part ; *Thames* had not all :
The *North* diuided honor, with the *South* :
And like powre held like Greatnes feuerall :
Where other Right, spake with another mouth ;
Another Heire, another Prince they call,
Whom naturall succession follow doth ;
The branch of Kings, the true sonne of the Crowne :
To whom, no father can but leauue his owne.

82

The King, as husband to the Crowne, doth by
The wiues infeooffement hold ; and onely here
Inioyes the same for life, by Curtesie ;
Without powre to dispose it other-where
(After his death) but as th'authoritie,
Order, and custome of Succession beare :

St. 79, l. 7, 'That they at length, during his life agreed' ².

St. 80, l. 1, 'Which solemnly' ² : l. 2, 'Proclaym'd with ioyful acclama-
tions' ² : l. 4, 'By oathes, vowes, protestations' ² : l. 5, 'Buylt with all
strength of forme, as to abide' ² : l. 6, 'All whatsoeuer oppofitions' ².

St. 81, l. 8, 'T'whose Child. no father can but loue his owne' ².

St. 82, l. 5, 'life' ².

And therefore *Henries* Act cannot vndo
The right of him, whom it belongs vnto.

83

And this vnnaturall intrusion, here,
Of that attainted Blood, out of all course,
Effected with confusion and with feare,
Must be reduc't to other tearmes, of force.
These infolencies Iustice cannot beare :
The fword (whereto they onely had recourse)
Must cut this knot, so intricately ty'd ;
Whose vaine contriued ends are plaine descry'd.

84

Thus they giue-out ; and out the fword in hand
Is drawne for blood, to iustifie the same :
And by a side, with many a Worthie, mand ;
Great Somerset, Excester, Buckingham,
With Clifford, Courtney, and Northumberland ;
(Lords of as mightie courage as of name)
Which all, against *Yorke*s forced courses, bend ;
Who, hauing done, yet had not made an end :

85

But, to another worke, is forc't to go ;
The last turmoyle lab'ring Ambition had :
Where Pride and Ouer-weening led him so
(For fortunes past) as made the issue sad :
For, whether safer counsell would or no,
His yet vnfurnisht troupes he desp'rat led

St. 83, l. 1, 'And the' ²; 'here' omitted : l. 3, 'Onely affected with confusion' ² : l. 5, 'may not thus go on' ².

St. 84, l. 5, 'With' omitted : l. 6, 'spirites, as of name' ² : l. 8, 'Who thought h'had done, he had not' ².

From *Sandall Castle*, vnto *VVakefield Greene*,
Against far mightier forces of the Queene.

86

Where, round inclof'd by Ambushments fore-lay'd,
Hard-working for his life (but all in vaine)
With number and confusion ouer-lay'd,
Himselfe and valiant *Salisbury* are slaine¹ :
With whome, the most and dearest blood decay'd
Of his couragious and aduenturous traine :
So short a life had those long hopes of his ;
Borne not to weare the Crowne, he wrought for thus ;

87

But, in the ryse of his out-springing lust,
Now in the last of hope, receiv'd this fall ;
Now, that his working powres so far had thrust,
That his desires had but this step to all :
When, so neere home, he seem'd past all distrust,
This vnexspectid wracke doth him befall :
This successor th'inheritor fore-goes ;
The play-game made of Fortune, and his foes.

88

Whose young sonne, *Rutland* (made the sacrifice
For others sinnes, ere he knew how to sinne)
Brought only but to see this exercise
Of blood and wounds, endes ere he did beginne :
Whose teares, whose mone, whose lamentable cryes,
Could ncither mercie nor compassion winne :

¹ The Battel of Wakefield, where the D. of Yorke is slaine : the E. of Salburie taken & beheaded at Yorke : Edmond E. of Rutland, youngest sonne to the D. of Yorke murthered after the Battell, by the L. Clifford.

St. 87, l. 2, 'had this foule fall'.

The branch of such a tree, though tender now,
Was not thought fit should any longer growe.

89

Which turning Chaunce, t'a long vngraced side,
Brings backe their almost quayled hopes againe ;
And thrust them on, to vse the present Tide
And Flowe of this occasion, to regaine
Th'inthralled Monarch, and to vndecide
The late concluded Act they held for vaine ;
And moues their Armies, new refresht with spoyle,
For more confusion, and for more turmoyle :

90

Victoriously proceeding vnwithstood,
Till at S. Albones¹ VVarwicke forc't a stand :
Where-as (to make his owne vndoing good)
The King is brought against himselfe to band :
His Powre and Crowne is set against his Blood ;
Forc't on the side, not of himselfe, to stand.
Diuided King, in what a case thou art !
To haue thy hand, thus bent against thy hart.

91

And here this famous fatall place, againe,
Is made the stage of blood ; againe these streets,
Imbru'd with slaughter, cov'red with the slaine,
Witnes what desp'rat wrath with rancor meets.
But, Fortune now is in an other vaine ;
Another side her turning fauour greets :
The King, heere lately lost, is now heere won² ;
Still sure t'vndoe the side that he was on.

¹ The 2. Battell at S. Albones.

² The King is againe recovered by the Queene.
St. 91, l. 6, 'tendring fauour'.

92

VVarwicke, with other *Genius* then his owne,
 Had heere to doe : which made him see the face
 Of sad misfortune, in the selfe same Towne,
 Where prosp'rous winning, lately gaue him grace¹ :
 And *Marg'ret* heere, this Martiall Amazon,
 Was, with the spirit of her selfe, in place :
 Whose labors, Fortune, euen to pittie, stir ;
 And, being a woman, could but giue it her.

93

The reputation and incouragement
 Of *VVakefield* glory, wakened them to this.
 And this seemes now the full accomplishment
 Of all their trauell, all their combrances.
 For, what can more disturbe this Gouernment,
 When *Yorke* extinct, & *VVarwick* conquered, is ?
 Directing *Salburie*, left without a head,
 What reststhere now, that all's not finished ?

94

Thus, for the sicke, preseruing Nature striues
 Against corruption, and the loathsome Graue ;
 When, out of Deaths colde hands, she backe reprises
 Th'almost confounded spirits, she faine would saue :
 And them cheeres vp, illightens, and revives ;
 Making faint Sickenesse, words of health to haue,
 With lookes of life, as if the worst were past ;
 When strait comes dissolution, and his last.

¹ The E. of Warwick with the D. of Norfolk, put to flight, and Sir Iohn Grey slaine on the Kings side.

St. 93, l. 6, ‘ & ’ omitted : l. 7, ‘ left ’ omitted.

95

So fares it with this late reviued Queene :
 Whose Victories, thus fortunately wonne,
 Haue but as onely lightning motions beene,
 Before the ruine that ensu'd thereon.
 For, now another springing powre is seene ;
 Whereto, as to the new arysing Sunne,
 All turne their faces, leauing those lowe rayes
 Of setting Fortune, which no Climer waighes.

96

Now is yong *March*, more than a Duke of *Yorke* ;
 For, youth, loue, grace and courage make him more.
 All which, for Fortunes fauour, now do worke,
 Who graceth freshest Actors euermore ;
 Making the first attempt, the chiefeſt worke
 Of any mans designes, that striues therefore.
 "The after-ſeasons are not ſo well bleſt.
 "For, thofe firſt ſpirits make their firſt actions beſt.

97

Now as the *Libyan* Lion, when with paine
 The wearie Hunter hath purſu'd his prey
 From Rockes to Brakes, from Thickets to the Plaine,
 And at the point, thereon his hands to lay,
 Hard-by his hopes, his eye vpon his gaine,
 Out-rushing from his denne raps all away :
 So comes yong *March*, their endes to disappoint,
 Who now were growne ſo neere vnto the point.

98

The loue of theſe important ſoutherne parts,
 Of *Effex, Surry, Middleſex, and Kent*,

St. 95, l. 2, 'ſo fortunately'*. St. 96, l. 2, 'makes'*: l. 8, 'theſe first
 actions'*'. St. 97, l. 2, 'had'*'.

The Queene had wholly lost ; as they whose hearts
 Grew ill affected to her gouernment,
 Vpon th'vnciuile and presumptuous parts,
 Play'd by the Northerne troupes, growne insolent :
 Whom, though she could not gouerne otherwise,
 Yet th'ill that's wrought for her, vpon her lies.

99

So wretched is this execrable Warre,
 " This ciuile Sworde : wherein, though all wee see
 " Be foul, and all things miserable are ;
 " Yet most distresse-full is the victorie :
 " Which is, not onely th'extream ruiner
 " Of others ; but, her owne calamity :
 " Where, who obtains, what he would cannot do :
 " Their powre hath part, who holpe him thereunto.

St. 99, l. 4, ' Yet most of all is eu'n the victorie ' : l. 7, ' cannot what
 he would, do ' : l. 8, ' that holpe him.'

After st. 99 (= 100) follow these two additional stanzas :—

' Which caufd that she not long her conquest ioy'd,
 Nor long imbrac'd her Lords redemption,
 Who now with passion wholly ouerioy'd,
 Triumphes t'hau'e lost the day, to be so wonne,
 Bleffing their care, praifing their faithful syde ;
 Embracing now his wife, and now his sonne,
 Whom there with many others else he knights,
 Who for him, held against him fiercest flights.

' Thus he that lately of another syde,
 Was brought of force to be of their intent,
 Recarried with the current of the tide,
 Is backe return'd t'his proper element :
 Th'vnvoluntary bonds seeme as vntide ;
 For forced t'offend h'is almost innocent :
 N'agreement, that necessity constraines,
 Longer than the necessitie remaines.'

100

The Citty, whose good-will they most desire,
 (Yet thereunto durst not commit their state)
 Sends them not those prouisions they require ;
 Which seem'd restrained by the peoples hate¹ :
 Yet *Marches* help farre off, and neere this fire
 (To winne them time) forc't them to mediate
 A reconcilement : which, well entertain'd,
 Was fairely now growen-on, and neerely gain'd :

101

When, with a thousand tongs, swift-wing'd Fame coms,
 And tells of *Marches* gallant Victories :
 Who, what withstands, subdues ; all ouercomes ;
 Making his way through fiercest enemies ;
 As hauing now to cast, in greater Summes,
 The Reckning of his hopes, that mainly rife.
 His fathers death, giues more life vnto wrath :
 And vexed valour, greater courage hath.

102

And now, as for his last, his lab'ring worth
 Works on the coast which on faire *Seuerne* lyes :
 Whereto his Father (passing to the North)
 Sent him, to leuie other fresh supplies :
 But, hearing now what *Wakefield* had brought forth ;
 Imploring ayde against these iniuries,

¹ The Queene, after the battaile of S. Albones, sent to the Maior of London for certaine prouisions : who willing to furnish hir therewithall, the Commons of the Citie stayed the same, and would not permit the carts to pas. Wherevpon, the L. Mayor sent to excuse himselfe, and to appeafe the displeasure of the Queene.

St. 100, l. 2, 'thereto durst not to commit '².

St. 102, l. 3, 'Whither, when *Yorke* set forward for the North '³ : l. 4, 'He's sent '⁴.

Obtains from *Gloster, Worster, Shrewburie,*
Important powres, to worke his remedie.

103

Which he, against *Pembroke* and *Ormond*,¹ bends ;
Whom *Margaret* (now vpon her victory)
With all speed possible from *VVakefield* sends ;
With hope to haue surpris'd him suddenly.
Wherin, though she all meanes, all wit extends,
To th'vtmost reach of wary policie ;
Yet nothing her avayles : no plots succeed,
T'avert those mischieves which the heauens decreed.

104

For, neere the Crosse ally'd vnto his name,
He crost those mighty forces of his foes ;
And with a spirit, ordy'nd for deeds of fame,
Their eager-fighting Army ouer-throwes² :
Making all cleer behind, from whence he came ;
Bearing-downe, wholly, what before him rose ;
Like to an all-confounding Torrent seemes :
And was made more, by *VVarwicks* mighty stremes.³

¹ Jasper E. of Pêbrok, and Iames Butler E. of Ormond & Wiltshire.

² The battell of Mortimers crofs wher Owen Teuther, father to the E. of Pembroke, who had married K. Hen. mother was taken & beheaded.

³ The E. of Warw. after his ouerthrow at St. Alb. retires with all the forces hee could make, and ioines with the yong D. of York : who comming to London, and receiued with all ioye, a great Councell was presently called of the L L. spirituall and temporall : where King Henry was adiudged insufficient for the Gouvernment of the Realme, and to be deprived of all regall authoritie ; and the D. of Yorke elected for K. and after proclaymed by the name of Edward the 4. the 4 of March, 1460. at the age of 18. And so Her. 6. after he had raignd 38 yeares 8. moneths, was depoised.

St. 104, l. 1, 'christened by his owne name' : l. 3, 'borne for eternall fame' : l. 8, 'Wherinto runne *VVarwicks* dispiered' .

105

With th'inundation of which Greatnesse, he
 (Hauing no bounds of powre to keepe him backe)
 Marcht to the Citie : at whose entrance free,
 No signes of ioy, nor no applaudings lacke.
 Whose neere approach, when this sad Queene did see,
 (Tauoyde these rocks of her neere threatening wrack)
 With her griev'd troupes North-ward she hence departs ;
 And leaues, to Youth and Fortune, these South-parts.

106

Glory, with admiration, entring now,
 Opened that easie doore to his intent,
 As that there needes not long time to allow
 The Right he had vnto the Gouernement ;
 Nor *Henries* iniuries to difauow,
 Against his oath, and th'Act of Parlement.
 " For, heere the speediest way he takes t'accord
 Difference in law, that pleades it with the Sword.

107

Gath'red to see his mustred Companies,
 Stooде all the flocking troopes of *London* streets ;
 When *Faulconbridge*, with gentle feeling, tries
 How strong the pulse of their affection beates ;
 And (reckning vp the grieuous miseries,
 And desolation, which the Country threats)
 Askt them, whom they would haue to be their King,
 To leade those troopes, and State in forme to bring.

St. 106, l. 1, 'that '² : l. 3, 'discusse '² : l. 5, 'dealing most iniurious '².

108

Whereto, with such an vniuersall shownt,
 The Earle of *March*, the multitude replyes,
 As the rebounding Echo st freight through-out
 (From Towre to Towre reuerberated) flyes
 To th'eares of those great Lords, who late about
 The consultation for this enterprise.
 Whose care is sav'd, which most they stood vpon :
 For, what they counsell how to doe, is done.

109

And nothing now, but to confirme him king,
 Remaines (which must not long remaine) to do.
 The present heate doth strait dispatch the thing,
 With all those solemne rites that 'long thereto :
 So that, what *Yorke*, with all his travayling,
 Force and intrusion, could not get vnto,
 Is now thus freely layd vpon his sonne ;
 Who must make faire, what fowly was begunne.

110

Whose end, attayn'd, had it here made an end
 Of foule destruction, and had stay'd the bloud

St. 108, l. 2, 'all generally cries' : l. 3, 'all throughout' :
 St. 109, l. 1, 'Nothing, but now to crowne this chosen king' :
 Additional stanza in folio :—

‘ In whom appeare all Maiesties best partes
 Both perf’nage, bloud, vertue, powre and wit,
 Which in the throne and kingdome of mens hertes,
 Onely makes princes gloriously to sit,
 And which, now to recure the broken parts,
 Of a dif-oynted Rule, were onely fitte,
 To whom my verfe now vowes if honor brings,
 This is my fide, my Muse must hold with kings ’ :
 St. 110, l. 1, ‘ But had this end attaintd, here made an end ’ .

Which *Towton, Exham, Tewksbury* did spend
 With desp'rate hands, and deeper wounds withstood ;
 And that none other Crowne, brought to contend
 With that of his, had made his seeme lesse good ;
 How had this long-afflicted Land been blest !
 Our sighes had ended, and my *Muse* had rest.

III

Which now (but little past halfe her long way)
 Stands trembling at the horrors that succeed ;
 Weary with these embroylements, faine would stay
 Her farther course, vnwilling to proceed :
 And, faine to see that glorious holy-day
 Of Vnion, which this discord reagreed ;
 Knowes not as yet, what to resolute upon ;
 Whether to leaue-off here, or else go-on.

St. 110, l. 3, 'Saxton, Exham' : l. 8, 'ceast'.

St. III, l. 1, 'but in the midd'ft of her long way' : l. 6, 'hath agreed'.

The end of the seauenth Booke.



THE EIGHTTH B O O K E.¹

THE ARGVMENT.

*King Edward, Powre against King Henry led;
And hath at Tawton-field the victory.
From whence, King Henry into Scotland fled:
Where he attempts his States recovery;
Steales into England; is discouered;
Brought Prisoner to the Toure disgracefully.
And Edward, whiles great Warwick doth assay
A Match in France, marries the Lady Grey.*



N yet, sad Verse: though those bright
starres, from whence
Thou hadst thy light, are set for
euermore;
And that these times do not like
grace dispense
To our indeuours, as those did before:
Yet on; since She, whose beames do reincense
This facred fire, seemes as referu'd in store

¹ This 'Eighth Book' first appeared in 1609 4to, and 1623 being identical with it, there are no various readings. G.

To raise this Worke, and here to haue my last ;
 Who had the first of all my labours past.

2

On (with her blessed fauour) and relate,
 With what new bloud-shed, this new chofen Lord
 Made his first entry to th'afflicted State,
 Past his first Act of publique, with the sword,
 Ingor'd his new-worne Crowne, and how he gat
 Possession of affliction, and restor'd
 His Right vnto a Royall miserie ;
 Maintainèd with as bloudy dignitie.

3

Shew, how our great Pharsalian Field was fought
 At *Towton* in the North¹ ; the greatest day
 Of ruine, that diffension euer brought
 Vnto this Kingdom : where, two Crownes did sway
 The worke of slaughter ; two Kings Causes wrought
 Destruction to one People, by the waie
 Of their affections, and their loyalties ;
 As if one, for these ills, could not suffice.

4

Where *Lancaster* and that couragious side
 (That noble constant Part) came furnished
 With such a Powre, as might haue terrifi'd
 And ouer-run the earth ; had they been led

¹ Edward beeing proclaimed, and acknowledged for King, presently sets forward towards the North, to encounter with K. Hen. 6. who in York-shire had assembled a puissant armie, of neere 60000. men, and at a place called Towton, about 4. miles from Yorke, both their powers met : where was fought the greatest battaile our stories mention, in all these ciuill wars. Where both the Armies consisted of aboue a 100000. men, & all of our own nation.

The way of glory, where they might haue tri'd
 For th'Empire of all *Europe*, as those did
 The Macedonian led into the East ;
 Their number being double, at the least.

5

And where braue *Yorke* comes as compleatly mand,
 With courage, valour, and with equall might ;
 Prepar'd to trie with a resolued hand,
 The metall of his Crown, and of his Right :
 Attended with his fatall fier-brand
 Of Warre, *Warwicke* ; that blazing starre of fight,
 The Comet of destruction, that portends
 Confusion, and distresse, what way he tends.

6

What rage, what madnes, *England*, do we see ?
 That this braue people, in such multitude
 Run to confound themselues, and all to be
 Thus mad for *Lords*, and for meere Seruitude.
 What might haue been, if (Roman-like, and free)
 These gallant Spirits had nobler ends pursu'd,
 And strayn'd to points of glory and renowme,
 For good of the Republique and their owne ?

7

But, here no *Cato* with a Senate stood
 For Common-wealth : nor here were any sought
 Temancipate the State, for publique good ;
 But onely, headlong, for their faction wrought.
 Here, euery man runs-on to spend his bloud,
 To get but what he had already got.
 For, whether *Pompey*, or a *Cæsar* wonne,
 Their state was euer sure to be all one.

8

And, first, before these fatall Armies met,
 Had forward *Warwicke* lay'd the passage free,
 At *Berry Brigges* : where the Lord *Clifford* (set
 With an aduentrous gallant companie
 To guard that streight, *Yorke's* farther march to let)
 Began the Scene to this great Tragedie ;
 Made the first entrance on the Stage of blood ¹ :
 Which now, set wide for wounds, all open stood.

9

When, *Edward* to exhort his men began,
 With words, whereto both spirit and Maiestie
 His perf'nage gave ; for-that he was a man
 (Befides a King) whose Crowne fate gracefully :
 Com'n is the day, sayd he, wherin who can
 Obtaine the best, is Best : this day must try
 Who hath the wrong, and whence our ills haue beene :
 And tis our fwords must make vs honest men.

10

For though our Cause, by God and men allow'd,
 Hath in it honor, right, and honestie :
 Yet all, as nothing, is to be avow'd,
 Vnlesis withall, we haue the victorie.
 For, Iustice is (we fee) a virtue proud,
 And leanes to powre, and leaues weake miserie.
 And therefore, seeing the case we now stand in,
 We must resolute either to dy or winne.

¹ The L. Clifford slaine at Ferry Briggs.

I I

So that if any here doth finde his heart
 To fayle him, for this noble worke, or stands
 Irrefolute this day ; let him depart,
 And leaue his Armes behind, for worthier hands.
 I knowe, enow will stay to doo their part,
 Here to redeeme themselues, wiues, children, landes,
 And haue the glory that thereby shall rise,
 To free their Country from these miseries.

I 2

But here, what needed wordes to blowe the fire
 In flame already, and inkindled so
 As when it was proclaym'd, they might retire
 Who found vnwillingnes to vnder-goe
 That ventrous worke ; they all did so conspire
 To stand out Fortune, that not one would goe,
 To beare away a hand from bloud ; not one
 Defraud the Field of th'euill might be done.

I 3

Where *VVarwicke* too (producing, in their sight,
 An argument, whereby he did conclude
 There was no hope of safetie, but by fight)
 Doth sacrificize his horse, to Fortitude¹ :
 And thereby did the least conceipt of flight,
 Or any succour, by escape, exclude ;
 " Se'ing, in the streight of a neceffitie,
 " The meanes to win, is t'haue no meanes to flye.

¹ The E. of Warwike, before the Battayle began, with his own hands killed his horfe.

14

It was vpon the twi-light of that day
 (That peacefull day) when the Religious beare
 The Olieue-branches as they go to pray,
 (And we, in lieu, the blooming Palme vse here)
 When both the Armies, ready in array
 For th'early sacrificize of blood, appeare
 Prepar'd for mischiefe, ere they had full light
 To see to doo it, and to doo it right.

15

Th'aduantage of the time, and of the winde
 (Which, both, with *Yorke* seeme as retayn'd in pay)
 Braue *Faulconbridge*¹ takes hold-on, and assign'd
 The Archers their flight-shafts to shoothe away :
 Which, th'aduerse fide (with fleet and dimnesse, blinde,
 Mistaken in the distance of the way)
 Answere with their sheafe-arrowes ; that came short
 Of their intended ayme, and did no hurt ;

16

But, gath'red by th'on-marching Enemy,
 Returned were, like clowdes of steele ; which powre
 Destruction downe, and did new-night the sky :
 As if the Day had fayl'd to keepe his howre.
 Whereat, the ranged horse breake-out, deny
 Obedience to the Riders, scorne their powre,
 Disrank the troupes, set all in disarray,
 To make th'Assaylant owner of the day.

¹ William Neuile, L. Faulconbridge, after created E. of Kent.

17

Thus, thou peculiar Ingine of our Land
 (Weapon of Conquest, Maister of the Field)
 Renowmed Boaw (that mad'st this Crowne command
 The towres of *Fraunce*, and all their powres to yeeld)
 Art made at home to haue th'especiall hand
 In our dissensions, by thy worke vp-held :
 Thou first didst conquer vs ; then rayf'd our skill
 To vanquish others ; here our felues to spill.

18

And now how com'st thou to be out of date,
 And all neglected leav'st vs, and art gone ?
 And with thee, th'ancient strength, the manly state
 Of valor, and of worth, that glory wonne ?
 Or else stay'st thou, till new-priz'd shot abate ?
 (That neuer shall affect what thou hast don)
 And onely but attend'st some blessed Raigne,
 When thou and Virtue shalt be grac't againe.

19

But, this sharp tempest draue *Northumberland*,
 (Who led the vant-guard of king *Henries* side)
 With eger heat ioine battaile, out of hand ;
 And this disorder, with their swords to hide.
 Where, twice fие howres, these furious armies stand ;
 And Fortunes Ballance weigh'd on neither fide ;
 Nor either did but equall bloud-shed gayne,
 Till *Henries* chiefest leaders all were slaine.¹

¹ In this battaile of Towton on K. Hen. side, were slaine Hen. Percy E. of North. the EE. of Shrewsbury and Deuonshire, Iohn L. Clifford, the LL. Bewmonde, Neuile, Willoughby, Wells, Roos, Grey, Dacres, Fitz-hugh, Molineux, Beckingham : Knights, the 2 base sons of Hen. Holland D. of Excester, Richard Percie, Geruase Clifton, Andrew Trollop, &c. The whole number slaine were accompted, by some, 33000. by others, 35091.

20

Then, lo, those spirits, which from these heads deriuē
Their motions, gauē off working ; and, in haste,
Turne all their backs to Death, and mainely striue
Who from themselues shall run-away most fast.
The after-flyers on the former driue :
And they againe, by the pursuers chac't
Make bridges of their fellowes backs, to pass
The Brooks and Riuers, where-as danger was.

21

Witnes O cleare-stream'd *Cock* : within whose banks,
So many thousand, crawling, helpeſſ lay,
With wounds and wearineſſe ; who in their rankes,
Had valiantly behav'd themſelues that daie :
And might haue had more honour, and more thankes
By ſtanding to their worke, and by their stay,
“ But men, at once, life ſeeme to loue and loath ;
“ Running to loſe it, and to faue it both.

22

Vnhappy *Henrie*, from a little Hill,
Plac't not far off (whence he might view the fight)
Had all th'intire full proſpect of this ill,
With all the ſcattered slaughter, in his ſight :
Saw how the victor rag'd, and ſpoil'd at wil,
And left not off when all was in his might :
Saw, with how great adoo himſelfe was wonne ;
And with what ſtore of blood Kings are vndone.

23

We are not worth so much, nor I, nor he,
As hath beene spent for vs, by you this day,
Deare people, said he : therefore, O, agree,
And leaue off mifchiefe, and your malice stay.
Stay, *Edward*, stay. They must a People bee,
When we shall not be Kings : and it is they,
Who make vs with their miseries. Spare them,
For whom thou thus dost seeke a Diadem.

24

For me, I could be pleaf'd t'haue nought to doc
With Fortune ; and content, my selfe were ill,
So *England* might be well ; and that t'vndoe
Me, might suffice the fword, without more ill.
And yet perhaps, these men, that cleave vnto
The parts of Princes, with fuch eger will,
Haue likewise their owne ends, of gaine or hate,
In these our strifes, and nourish this debate.

25

Thus stood he (drawing lines of his discourse)
In contemplation ; when, more needfully,
It did import him to deuise a course,
How he might shift for his recovery :
And had beene taken had not some by force,
Refcu'd, and drawne him off, more speedilie ;
And brought him vnto *Yorke*, in all maine poste :
Where he first told his Queen, the daie was lost.¹

¹ Queen Margaret with her sonn were in the City of Yorke, expecting the euent of this Battaille.

26

Who, as compos'd of that firme temp'rature
 Which could not bend to base complaynts, nor wayle
 As weakeness doth (fore-knowing how t'indure)
 Fayl'd not her felse, though Fortune did her fayle ;
 But, rather casts-about how to procure
 Meanes to referue her part, and to preuaile
 Of that poore time left her to saue her owne ;
 As one though ouer-come, not ouer-thrown'e :

27

Now, when she had of fatall *Lancaster*
 Seene all the pillars crusht and ruined,
 That vnder-fet it ; all that followed her
 Of those heroicke personages, dead,
 Saue onely *Somerset*, and *Excester*
 (Who from this last destruction hardly fled)
 And saw all lost, and nothing in her might,
 But onely that which must be sav'd by flight :

28

Now, when there was no North left, of their owne,
 To draw vnto ; no side, to gather head ;
 No people to be rayf'd, t'an emptie Crowne ;
 Nor yet the ground their owne, whereon they tread.
 When yet your faith (worthy of all renowne)
 Constant *Northumbrians*, firme continued :
 And, though you could not render succors fit
 Vnto your Sov'raigne, you would saue him yet ;

¹ St. 26—This stanza mis-numbered again 25, and so onward—corrected. G

29

And be (as few men, in this world, are) true
 Vnto affliction, and to miserie :
 And would not basely purchace and renew
 Your peace, and safetie, by disloyaltie :
 But wrought, that though the Victor did pursue,
 With greedy care and egre industrie,
 To haue surpriz'd him ; yet was all in vaine,
 Till he recouered *Berwicke*, with his Traine.

30

Where now, he was at some more vacancie
 To vnderstand, and see himselfe vndone :
 Which, in this fodaine-comming misery,
 He had no leasure to consider-on.
 And now suruaies he that poore company,
 Attending on himselfe, his wife, and sonne ;
 Sees how that all the State, which serv'd his Crowne,
 Was shut within the walls of one small towne :

31

Beholds there, what a poore distressed thing,
 A King without a people was ; and whence
 The glory of that Mightinesse doth spring
 That ouer-spreds (with such a reuerence)
 This vnder-world : whence comes this furnishing
 And all this splendor of Magnificence :
 He sees, what chayre fo-euer Monarch fate
 Vpon, on Earth, the People was the State.

32

And yet, although he did contayne no more
 Then what he saw ; yet saw a peece so small
 Could not containe him. What he was before,
 Made him vncapable of any wall,
 To yeeld him succour now ; he must haue more,
 Then onely this small Holde, or none at all.
 And therefore, this (se'ing it auayl'd him not,
 Nor could he keepe) he renders to the Scot¹ ;

33

As th'Earnest, to confirme and ratifie
 The league betweene them two, newly begun :
 Whereof to make more sure and faster tye,
 He promist, too, th'alliance of his sonne :
 And all that might secure their amity,
 With willingnesse, on either side was done.
 And heere they practise, all they can deuise,
 To turne reuenge vpon their Enemyes.

34

Thus, *England*, didst thou see the mightiest King
 Thou euer hadst (in Power and Maiesy
 Of State, and of Dominions ; gouerning
 A most magnificent Nobility ;
 With an aduent'rous people, flourishing
 In all the glories of felicitie)
 Chac't from his kingdom, forc't to seeke redresse
 In parts remote, distrest and succourlesse.

¹ Hen. 6 deliuers the towne of Berwicke to the K. of Scots.

35

Now *Bullingbrook*, thefe miferies, heere showne,
 Doo much vnlode thy finne ; make thy ill, good.
 For, if thou didſt by wrong, attaine the Crowne,
 T'was without cryes ; it cost but little bloud :
 But, *Yorke*, by his attempt hath ouer-throwne
 All the best glorie wherein *England* stood ;
 And did his ſtate by her vndooing winne :
 And was, though white without, yet red within.

36

And thus he hath it ; and is now to deale
 For th'intertaining and continuance
 Of mens affections ; and to feeke to heale
 Those foul corruptions, which the maintenance
 Of fo long wars bred in the Common-weale.
 He muſt remunerate, prefer, aduance,
 His chiefest friendes ; and profecute with might,
 The aduerſe part ; doo wrong, to doo men right :

37

Whilſt Martiall *Margaret*, with her hopefull Sonne,
 Is trauailing in *France* to purchase ayde ;
 And plots, and toiles, and nothing leaues vndone ;
 Though all in vaine. For, being thus ouer-lay'd
 By Fortune and the Time, all that is done
 Is out of ſeafon. For ſhe muſt haue stay'd
 Till that firſt heate of mens affections (which
 They beare new Kings) were laid, and not ſo much.

38

When they should finde, that they had gayn'd no more,
 Then th'Asse, by changing of his Maisters, did ;
 (Who still must labour as he vf'd before)
 And those expectancies came frustrated,
 Which they had set vpon th'imagin'd score,
 Of their accounts ; and had considered,
 How that it did but little benefite
 The Doues ; To change the Falcon, for the Kite.

39

And yet braue Queene, for three yeares of his Raigne,
 Thou gau'ft him little breathing time of rest ;
 But still his miseries didst entertaine
 With new attempts, and new assaults addrest :
 And, at thy now-returne from *France* againe,
 (Suppli'd with forces) once more gathereddst
 An Army for the Field, and brought'ft, to warre,
 The scattered parts of broken *Lancaster*.

40

And once againe, at *Exham*, ledſt them on
 With Scots, and French t'another bloody day¹ ;
 And there beheldſt thy ſelfe againe vndone,
 With all that Rest, whereon thy fortunes lay.
 Where, *Somerset* (late to King *Edward* gone,
 And got his pardon) hauing ſcap't away,

¹ Queene Margaret, furnished with a great power of Scots and French, to the number of 20000, with her hufband entred into Northumberland, took the Castle of Bambrough and after came forward to the Bishoprick of Durham. Wher Hen. Bewfort D. of Somerſet who had lately beene reconciled to K. Ed. 4. ioined with them, and also brought thither with him Sir Ralph Percie, a man of great courage & worth : who were taken in the battaile of Exham, and executed in An. 3. Ed. 4. 1464.

With noble *Percie*, came to bring their blood
Vnto thy side, whereto they first had stood.

41

Where, the Lords, *Molines, Roffe*, and *Hungerford*,
With many else of noble Families,
Extinguisht were ; and many that daies fword
Cut-off their names, in their posterities.
Where fled, againe, their lucklesse followed Lord ;
And is so neere pursu'd by th'enemies,
As th'Ensigne of his Crowne was feiz'd vpon,
For him who had before his Kingdome wonne ;

42

And shortly after, too, his person gat.
For he, now wearied with his long exile,
And miseries abrode, grew passionate,
With longing to returne t'his natvie foyle.
And fe'ing he could not do the same, in State
He seekes, disgui'd in fashion, to beguile
The world a time, and steale the libertie
And fight of his deare Country, priuately :

43

As if there were, for a pursued King,
A couert left on earth, wherein to hide ;
When Powre and Iealousie are trauailing,
And lay to catch affliction, on each side.
Misfortune serues, we see, for euery thing,
And foon he comes, God knows, to be descry'd¹ :

¹ King Hen. was taken in Lancashire, and brought to London, with his legs bound to the Stirops, hauing, in his company, onlie Doctor Manning, Deane of Windzor, with another Diuine : who were taken with him and committed to the Tower.

And *Edward* hath the booty he desir'd :
For whose establishment, all things conspir'd.

44

Yet, long it was not, ere a fire began
To take, in th'inwardst Closet, where he lay'd
The treasure of his chiefest trust ; and ran
From thence, through al his State, before it staid.
For, be'ing a King, who his whole fortunes wan
With others handes, must many leaue vnpay'd :
And could not fill vp that vast greedinesse
Of Expectation, which is bottomlesse :

45

Though he did all the best that in him lay
(As a most actiue Prince) to satisfie
The int'rest of their trauayles, and defray
The bands contracted twixt his soueraignty
And the Republick : seeking to allay
✓ All greeuances ; reorder equity ;
Reform the Barres, that Iustice did abuse¹ ;
Lay easie on the State, as new Kings vse.

46

As he, who, hauing found great Treasury,
The first yeare offers, with most gratefull cheere,
A sheepe of gold, to *Iunoes* deity ;
And next, of siluer, for the second yeare ;
The third, of brasie ; and then, neglectiuely,
Nothing at all : So those respects, which were
Borne of a present feeling, mov'd him most ;
But soon were with their times and motiues lost.

¹ K. Ed. 4. fate on the Kings Bench, in open Court, 3 daies together, in Michaelmas Terme An. 2. of his raigne to vnderstand how his lawes were executed.

47

And, what his bounty could not recompense,
 He payes with honors, and with dignities.
 And (more to angle the beneuolence,
 And catch the loue of men, with curtesies)
 . He oft would make his dignity dispense
 With his too lowe familiarities ;
 Descending, from his Sphere of Maiesty,
 Beneath himselfe, very submissiuely.

48

And when he had dispos'd, in some good traine,
 His home affaires ; he counfells how t'aduance
 His forraine correspondence, with the chaine
 Of some alliance that might countenance
 His Greatnesse, and his quiet intertaine.
 Which was thought fitteſt with ſome match, of *France* ;
 To hold that Kingdome, from ſubayding ſuch
 Who else could not ſuſt, nor hope ſo much.

49

Nor was it now a time to haue contrast
 With any forrain mighty Potentate ;
 But keep the outer doores of each ſide faſt,
 Hauing ſo much to doo within his State.
 And, therevpon, was *Warwicke* (by whose caſt
 All muſt be wrought) imployd to mediate
 A preſent Marriage, to be had betweene
 Him, and the ſiſter of the yong French Queene.¹

¹ The Earle of Warwicke was ſent into France to treat of a mariage between King Edward and the Ladie Bona, daughter to Loys D. of Sauoy, and ſiſter to the La. Carlote Queene of France : which was there agreed vpon ; and Monsieur Damp Martin with others appointed to be ſent into

50

Which was not long, nor hard to bring to passe
 Where like respects met in a point alike.
 So that the same as euen concluded was,
 And all as done ; Lady and friends all like :
 When Loue, the Lord of Kings (by whom must passe
 This A^ct of our Affections) tooke dislike
 That he was not made priuy thereunto ;
 And therfore, in his wrath, would all vndoe.

51

For, whiles this youthfull Prince, at his disport
 In *Grafton* woods, retyr'd from publick care,
 Attending how his sute in *France* did forte
 (Whereon his cogitations onely were)
 He comes, at home, surpris'd in other sort ;
 A neerer fire inflam'd his passions heere ;
 An English Beautie, with more worth indu'd
 Then *France* could yeeld, his roiall heart subdu'd.

52

A wofull widdow, whom his quarrell had
 (As it had many moe) made desolate,
 Came to his Court, in mournfull habit clad,
 To sue for Iustice, to relieue her state.
 And entring as a suppliant all sad ;
 With gracefull sorrow, and a comely gate
 She past the Presence : where, all eyes were cast
 On her more stately presence, as she past.

Eng. for the full accomplishing thereof. But in the mean time, (the first of May) the K. maried the La. Elizabeth Grey, daughter to the Dutches of Bedford, late wife to Sir Iohn Grey, slaine at S. Albones on King Henries part.

53

Her lookes, not let-abrode (but carefully
Kept in, restraint) held their reseruednesse :
Obseruing none but her owne dignity,
And his, to whom she did her selfe addresse.
And, drawing neere his royll Maiesty,
A blush of reuerence, not bashfulnesse,
Lightned her louely cheeks, and downe she kneeles ;
Giues her Petition, for the wrongs she feeleſ.

54

And, in deliv'ring it, lifts vp her eyes
(The mouingſt Mediatours ſhee could bring)
And ſtraiſt withdrawes them, in ſubmissiue wife ;
Not fixing them directly on the King :
Who, mov'd with her ſweete fashion, bade her riſe,
With gentle language full of comforthing ;
Read her request : but thought not what he read.
The liſtes, hee view'd, her eyes had figured.

55

Then pauf'd a while, and muſd ; as if he weigh'd
The ſubſtance of her ſute. The which, God wote,
Was not the thing he muſ'd. And, hauing ſtay'd,
Seem'd to read on againe ; but yet readeſ not :
And ſtill a ſtealing ſide-caſt looke conuai'd
On her ſweete face ; as if he had forgot
To be elſe-where, then where he did behold :
And thought not what he diſ ; but what he would.

56

But, leaſt his ſodaine paſſion miſt haue, there,
More wiſneſſes then he would wiſh to haue ;
He tooke vp hiſ deſires, which poſting were
Beyond their ſtaiges ; and thiſ anſwere gaue :
Madam, we wiſt our ſelſe take time to heare
Your Caufe at laſte : wherein we wiſt you haue
No other reference, but repaire to vs :
Who wiſt accommodate thiſ buſineſſe.

57

She, that expeſted preſent remedie
(Hearing thiſ dilatory anſwer) thought,
The King found ſcruple in the equitie
Of her requeſt ; and thereupon he ſought
To put her to delayes of Court, whereby
She miſt be tyr'd, and in the end get nougħt.
And that, which her opinion made more ſtrong,
Was that he ſtudied, and was mute, fo long.

58

Which forc't from her thiſe wordes : My Lord,
Let not my being a *Lancastrian* bred
Without mine owne election, diſafford
Me right, or make my Caufe diſfigured ;
Since I am now the ſubiect of your ſword :
Which God hath (with your Right) eſtabliſhed,
To doo vs right : and let not what wee were,
Be now the cauſe to hurt vs as we are.

59

Ladie, mistake me not : neuer did I
 Make war with women, nor vf'd womens war,
 Reuenge ; but prosecuted honestly
 My Right, not Men. My quarrels ended are,
 With my obtayning of the victorie.
 And (Lady) knowe, your Cause moues me thus far,
 As you shall finde, sayd hee, I doo defire
 To doo you greater right then you require.

60

With this, they part ; both, with their thoughts full
 She, of her sute in hand ; and he of her : [charg'd :
 Wherein, he spends that night, and quite discharg'd
 All other cogitations ; to confer,
 First, how he might haue her estate inlarg'd :
 Then, in what sort her seruice to prefer
 Vnto his new exspectēt Wife and Queene :
 Then, how to maske his loue, from being seene.

61

For, yet, Lust was not growne to that degree
 To haue no limits ; but that Shame kept-in
 The greatest Greatnes, from this being free
 To hold their Wantonnes to be no sinne.
 For, though Kings cannot ouer-maistred bee,
 They will be ouer-lookt, and seene within :
 And, though they could their weakneses make sure ;
 Yet crymes, though safe, can neuer be secure.

62

Sometimes, he thinks it better to prouide
A place retyr'd, and haue her from the Court :
And then, with what pretentions he might hide
His priuat comming, and his oft resort :
Then, by his Queene, if it should be espi'd,
How he might cleare with her, and stop report.
And thus consumes the night : and if hee slept,
He slept those thoughts that with these passions kept.

63

The morning being com'n (and glad he was
'That it was com'n) after so long a night
He thought would haue no morning (time did passe
So flowe, and his desires ran-on so light)
A messenger with speed dispatched was,
Of speciall trust, this Lady to invite
To come t'his prefence ; though before the time
That Ladies rise : who rarely rise betime.

64

Yet foone shee hastes : and yet that foone seem'd long,
To him whose longing went so swift a pase :
And frets, that such attyring should belong
To that which yeelds it selfe sufficient grace ;
Consid'ring how these ornaments may wrong
The fet of beautie : which, we fee, doth grace
Th'attire it weares, and is not grac't thereby ;
As be'ing that onely, which doth take the eye.

65

But now, be'ing com'n, that quarrell of delay
 Streight ended was : her presence satisfies
 All, what Expectance had layd out for stay :
 And he beheld more sweetnesse in her eyes,
 And saw her more then she was yesterday :
 A cheerlines did with her hopes arise,
 That lamped clearer then it did before,
 And made her spirit, and his affections, more.

66

When, those who were about him, presently
 Voyded the roome, and left him to confer
 Alone with his faire Suter priuatly
 (As they who to his courses conscious were)
 And he began : Madame, the remedie
 Which you (in your Petition) sue-for here,
 Shall be allow'd to th'vtmost that you craue,
 With th'expedition you would wish to haue.

67

And here I haue another fute to you :
 Which if you please to grant, wee both shall now
 Rest equally content. Wherewith, there grew
 That sodaine alteration in her brow,
 As all were ouer-cast ; and so with-drew
 That freedome from her lookes (least they should 'low
 More then her heart might meane) as they reflect
 A narrower and a carefuller aspect.

68

That when he saw this barrier of dislike
 Thus inter-set, to keepe his forwardnes
 Backe from presumptiue pressing ; it did strike
 That reuerence, as it staide him to exprefse
 His farther will. And she replies : 'Tis like,
 When Kings to subiects sue, they meane no leſs
 Then to command ; nor must they be withstanded ;
 For that good Kings will ſeeke but what is good.

69

And, in that faire respect, your Maiestie,
 According to your will, both muſt and may
 Command my ſeruice ; who muſt reuerently
 Your royll pleasure euer ſhall obay.
 With which word, *pleaſure* (though it doubtfully
 In that hard fastneſſe of condition lay,
 Vnder the locke of goodneſſe) he was caſt
 In hope, he miſt obtaine the ſame at laſt.

70

And thus reioynes ; My pleaſure only ſhall
 Be, Madame, for your good ; please it but you
 To make it ſo. And, here to tell you all,
 I loue you ; and therein I tell you true.
 What honour may by Kings affections fall,
 Muſt light vpon your fortunes, as your due.
 And though *France* ſhall a Wife, for fashion, bring :
 You muſt be th'onely miſtress of the King.

71

Streight might you see, how Scorne, and Feare, &
 (All intermixt in one aspect) returne [Shame
 The message of her thoughts, before words came.
 And first, within her brow, in state fate Scorne ;
 Shame in her Cheekes ; where also Feare became
 An In-mate too ; and both appeare, by turne :
 Blushes did palenes, palenes blushes chace ;
 As scorning, fearing, shaming such disgrace.

72

She scornes to be addeem'd so worthlesse-base
 As to bee mov'd to such an infamie.
 She shames to thinke that ought, within her face,
 Should breed th'opinion of immodestie.
 Shee feares the fatall daunger of the place,
 Her lonenes, and the powre of Maiestie :
 And so (confus'd) in feare, in shame, in scorne,
 This Answere to his Motion doth returne :

73

My sov'raigne Lord, it grieues me that you deeme,
 Because I in this sort for Iustice sue,
 I would the same with mine owne wrong redeeme,
 And by dishonour reobtaine my due :
 No : I would hate that right, which should but seeme
 To be beholding to a wanton view
 Or motiue of my person, not my Cause ;
 That craues but right, from Iustice, and your lawes.

74

And knowe, great Monarch, that I more doo waigh
 My Distaffe with mine honour, then I doo
 The mightiest Scepter, King did euer sway
 Vpon the earth, or Nations bow'd vnto.
 I owe subiection ; which I humbly pay,
 With all the outward seruice I can doo :
 But, Sov'raigne, in the region of my hart
 I raigne sole Queene ; no King can force a part.

75

Here, Feare a little interpos'd a touch,
 To warne her violence to temporize
 With Powre, and State : and she concludes her speach,
 With craving pardon in more humble wife :
 Yet, in proud humble wife : which shew'd, how much
 She did her honor aboue Greatnes pris'e.
 And so, being full of what she did conceiue,
 Desires to be dismisse, and takes her leaue.

76

Here, *Mary Pembroke* (by whose generous brow,
 And noble graces, I delineat
 These shapes of others virtues) could I showe
 In what a desperat and confus'd estate
 She left this disappointed King ; and how
 Loue and Ambition in their glory fate,
 And tyranniz'd on his diuided hart,
 Warring each other with a powrefull part.

77

How first, Loue vnderneath his Colours brought
 The strength of all her gracefull worthinesse :
 And sets them in th'aduantage of his thought,
 Vpon the side of Youth and Wantonnesse :
 Then how Ambition, that for glory wrought,
 Comes with his State, his Crowne, and Powrfulnes,
 And plants her on the side of prouidence,
 To beat vnsit Affections off from thence.

78

But, I must ouer-goe these passages ;
 And hasten-on my way, to ouer-take
 Mine endes, in sad and grauer businesse ;
 Wheroft I shall to you relation make :
 And yet my zeale here forc't mee thus t'expresse
Elizabeth, for our Elizaes sake ;
 Who grac't the *Muses* (which her Times became) :
 For, they who giue them comfort, must haue fame.

79

And I must tell you now, when this great fight
 Of counter-passions had beene throughly try'd,
 How in the ende the victorie did light
 Vpon Loues forces, as the stronger side ;
 And beat downe those respects of benefite,
 Of honor, greatnes, strength, and all beside ;
 And neuer graunted rest vnto his strife,
 Till mariage rites had her confirm'd his wife.

80

Which, that place, where he saw her first, saw donne,
Ere he remov'd his foot : for, Loue is stil
In haste, and (as a Lord, that rules alone)
Admittes no Counsellor, in good nor ill.
For, He and Kings gladly giue eare to none,
But such as smooth their wayes, and sooth their will.
And who will not desire to giue his voyce
(Be what it will) to prayse a Princes choyce ?

81

Which was (indeed) in virtue, beautie, grace,
And all but fortune, worthy of his bed :
And in that too, had hee but liv'd the space
T'haue seene her plentious issue fully bred ;
That they might haue collated strength and grace
On her weake side : which (scornd and malicēd)
Lay-open vndefenc't, apt to b'vndon
By proud vsurping Powre, when he was gon.

82

But now, when fame of this home-chosen Match
Arriu'd in *France* (for there it did arriue,
Ere they could heere attend to make dispatch
T'impart the same to *Warwick*, or contrive
Some colour that in any sort might fetch
Him fayrely off, and no dishonor giue)
It so much stird the humors in those parts,
As marr'd the whole complexion of their hearts.

83

The French King scornes such an indignity.
VVarwick disdaines imployment in this case.
 The Queene (inrag'd) with extreame vehemency,
 Stormes at her sisters and her owne disgrace.
 The Lady *Bona* takes most tenderly
 To be so mockt, with hope of such a Place :
 And all blame *Warwick*, and his fraud condem ;
 Whil'st he himself, deceiu'd, suffers with them :

84

And could not (by all meanes might be deuiz'd)
 Vntaste them of this violent disgust ;
 But that they still held, something lay disgui'd
 Vnder this treaty. So that now he must
 Bring-home his reputation cauterif'd
 With th'idle marke of seruing others lust
 In friuolous imployments, or be fent
 Out of the way to colour some intent.

85

" Which, to himselfe, made him, with grieve inueigh
 " Against distemp'red kings : who often are
 " Ill warrants for their owne affaires ; and waigh
 " Their lusts, more then their dignity, by far :
 " And what a miserie they haue that sway
 " Their great desigues ; what danger, and what care ;
 " And often must be forc't, be'ing at their becks,
 " To crack their reputation, or their necks.

86

" How their high fauours like as fig-trees are,
" That growe vpon the sides of rocks ; where they
" Who reach their fruit, aduenture must so far
" As t'hazard their deep down-fall and decay.
" Their grace, not fixt ; but, as a blazing star
" Burnes out the present matter, and away :
" And how the world could too wel witnesse beare,
" That both their loues and hates like dangerous were.

87

Thus he complaynes, and makes his home-retire ;
All disappointed of his purpos(es).
For, hoping, by this Match, to hold intire
That Lady, with her great alliances ;
And haue the King more firm to his desire,
By managing of both their bus'nesses ;
He, by this Match (thus made without his mean)
Comes barr'd from al those tying int'rests cleane.

88

For, well he knew, that all his seruice past
Was past ; and would not be a future tye
To hold him in, vnlesse that he could cast
To introduce some neere necessity
Of his imployment, that were like to last,
And shut-out all other concurrency.
Without which, nor his Greatnes, nor his Wits,
Could ward him from the Kings vnconstant fits.

89

Which more perplext him, and in neerer fort,
 Then what *France* might by his ambassage ghesse,
 Or *England* deeme. But, being arriu'd at Cort,
 He drawes a Trauerse 'twixt his greeuances ;
 Lookes like the time : his eye made not report
 Of what he felt within : nor was he lesse
 Then vsually he was, in euery part ;
 Wore a cleere face, vpon a clowdy hart :

90

Congratulates the Queene ; commends the King
 For his rare choice ; protesting her to be
 Far beyond all, the world beside could bring
 To fit his liking ; and that he did see
 The Lady *Bona* was a peeuiish thing,
 Sullayne, and proud ; and would in no degree
 Haue pleaf'd his humor, or in any fort
 Haue satisi'd the Ladies of this Cort.

91

And, after hauing finisht all the rite
 Of complement and interuisiting ;
 He humbly craues difmision that he might
 Retyre a while, t'attend the managing
 And setting of his country-buf'nesse right ;
 Whereby the better to attend the King :
 From whom he parts ; and neuer seem'd more deere,
 More grac't, nor yet himselfe of fre'er cheere.

92

First, *VVarwick*-Castle (that had feldome knowne
 The Maister there) he visits ; and from thence
 Goes t'other goodly Mannours of his owne.
 Where, seene with ioy, with loue, with reuerence ;
 (King of him selfe,) he findes that there is show'n
 The vfe of life, the true magnificence,
 T'inioy his Greatnesse : which, at Corte, in vaine
 Men toyle-for, and yet neuer doo attaine.

93

Which, his religious Conessor (who best
 Could cast, with what a violent acceſſe,
 This feuer of Ambition did molest
 His ſtill-fick minde) takes hold-on ; to addrefſe
 (Vpon th'aduantage of this little reſt)
 Some lenitiues, t'allay the firynesse
 Of this diſeaſe ; which (as a maladie,
 Seiz'd in the Spirits) hath ſeldom remedy.

94

" And thus ſets on him : See, my Lord, how heere
 " Th'eternall Prouidence of God hath brought
 " You to the Shore of ſafetie (out of feare)
 " From all the waues of miſery, that wrought
 " To ouer-whelm you ; and hath ſet you cleare,
 " Where you would bee ; with hauing (which you fought
 " Through all these hazards of diſtrefſe) a King
 " Of your owne making and establishing.

95

" And now, my Lord, I trust you will sit downe,
 " And rest you, after all this passed thrall,
 " And be your selfe (a Prince within your owne)
 " Without aduent'ring any more at all
 " Your state in others Bottomes ; hauing knowne
 " The dangers that on mighty Actors fall ;
 " Since, in the foot of your accompts, your gaynes
 " Come-short to make euen reck'ning with your paines.

96

" Inioy now what you wrought-for, in this sort
 " (If great-mens Endes be to enjoy their Endes)
 " And knowe, the happiest powre, the greatest port,
 " Is onely that which on it selfe depends.
 " Heere haue you State inough to be a Cort
 " Vnto your selfe ; here, where the world attends
 " On you, not you on it, obserued sole :
 " You, else-where but a part, are heere the whole.

97

" Th'aduantages of Princes, are (we see)
 " But things conceiu'd imaginarily.
 " For, euery state of fortune, in degree,
 " Some image hath of principalitie :
 " Which they inioy more naturall and free,
 " Then can great Powers, chain'd with observancie,
 " And with the fetters of respect still ty'd ;
 " Being easier far to follow then to guide.

98

" And what art Corts, but Camps of misery ?
" That doo besiege mens states, and still are prest
" T'affaile, prevent, complot, and fortifie ;
" In hope t'attaine, in feare to be supprest ;
" Where, all with shewes, and with apparancie,
" Men seeme, as if for stratagems addreft :
" Where, Fortune, as the Woolfe, doth still prefer
" The fowlest of the traine that followes her.

99

" And where, fayre hopes are lay'd (as ambushments)
" To intercept your life, and to betray
" Your liberty to such intanglements,
" As you shal neuer-more get cleare away :
" Where, both th'engagement of your owne intents,
" And others recknings, and accounts, shall lay
" Such waights vpon you, as you shal not part,
" Vnlesse you breake your credit, or your heart.

100

" Besides : as exiles, euer from your homes
" You liue perpetuall in disturbancy ;
" Contending, thrusting, shuffling for your roomes
" Of ease or honor, with impatency :
" Building your fortunes, vpon others tombes,
" For other then your owne posterity.
" You see, Corts few aduance ; many vndoo :
" And those they do aduance, they ruine too.

101

" And therefore now, my Lord, since you are heere,
 " Where you may haue your rest with dignitie ;
 " Worke that you may continue so : and cleare
 " Your selfe, from out these streights of misery.
 " Hold your estate and life, as things more deare
 " Then to be throwne at an vncertainty.
 " Tis time, that you and *England* haue a calme ;
 " And time, the Oliue stood aboue the Palme.

102

Thus the good Father, with an humble thought
 (Bred in a Cellularie lowe retyre)
 According to his quiet humor, sought
 T'auert him from his turbulent desire ;
 " When the great Earle began : Father, I note
 " What you with zeale aduise, with loue require :
 " And I must thanke you, for this care you haue,
 " And for those good aduertisements you gaue.

103

" And truely, Father, could I but get free
 " (Without being rent) and hold my dignitie ;
 " That Sheep-cot, which in yonder vale you see
 " (Beset with Groues, and those sweet Springs hard-by)
 " I rather would my Palace wish to bee,
 " Then any roofe, of proudest Maiestie :
 " But, that I cannot dooe ; I haue my part :
 " And I must liue, in one house, with my hart.

104

“ I knowe, that I am fixt vnto a Sphere
“ That is ordayn’d to moue. It is the place
“ My fate appoints me ; and the region where
“ I must, what-euer happens, there, imbrace.
“ Disturbance, trauaile, labor, hope and feare,
“ Are of that Clime, ingendred in that place;
“ And action best, I see, becomes the Best :
“ The Starres, that haue most glorie, haue no rest.

105

“ Besides : it were a Cowards part, to fly
“ Now from my Holde, that haue held out so well ;
“ It be’ing the Station of my life, where I
“ Am set to serue, and stand as Sentinell :
“ And must, of force, make good the place, or dy,
“ When Fate and Fortune (those great States) compell
“ And then, we Lords in such cafe euer are,
“ As peace can cut our throats aswell as war.

106

“ And hath her grieses, and her incombrances :
“ And doth with idle rest, deform vs more
“ Then any *Magha* can, or forcereffe,
“ With basely wasting all the Martiall store
“ Of heat and spirit (which gracest Manlinesse)
“ And makes vs still false images adore :
“ Besides profusion of our faculties,
“ In grosse dull glutt’ny, vap’rous gourmandise.

107

" And therefore since I am the man I am,
 " I must not giue a foote, least I giue all.
 " Nor is this Bird within my breast so tame,
 " As to be fed at hand, and mockt with-all.
 " I rather would my state were out of frame,
 " Then my renowne should come to get a fall.
 " No, no : th'vngratefull boy shall neuer think,
 " That I, who him inlarg'd to powre, will shrink.

108

" What is our life, without our dignitie ?
 " Which oft, we see, comes lesse by liuing long.
 " Who euer was there worth the memorie,
 " And eminent indeed, but still dy'd young ?
 " As if worth had agreed with destinie, [wrong.
 " That time, which rightes them, should not doo the
 " Besides ; Old-age doth giue, by too long space,
 " Our soules as many wrinkles as our face.

109

" And as for my inheritance and State
 " (What euer happen) I wil so prouide
 " That Law shall, with what strength it hath, collate
 " The same on mine, and those to mine ally'd :
 " Although I knowe, she serues a present State,
 " And can vndoo againe what shee hath ty'd.
 " But, that we leauue to him, who poynts-out heyres :
 " And howfoeuer, yet the world is theirs.

110

" Where, they must worke it out ; as borne to run
 " Those Fortunes, which as mightie Families

" (As euer they could be) before haue donne.
 " Nor shall they gaine, by mine indignities,
 " Who may without my courses be vndonne.
 " And who-so makes his State, and life, his tyes
 " To doo vnworthily, is borne a flauue :
 " And let him with that brand go to his Graue.

III

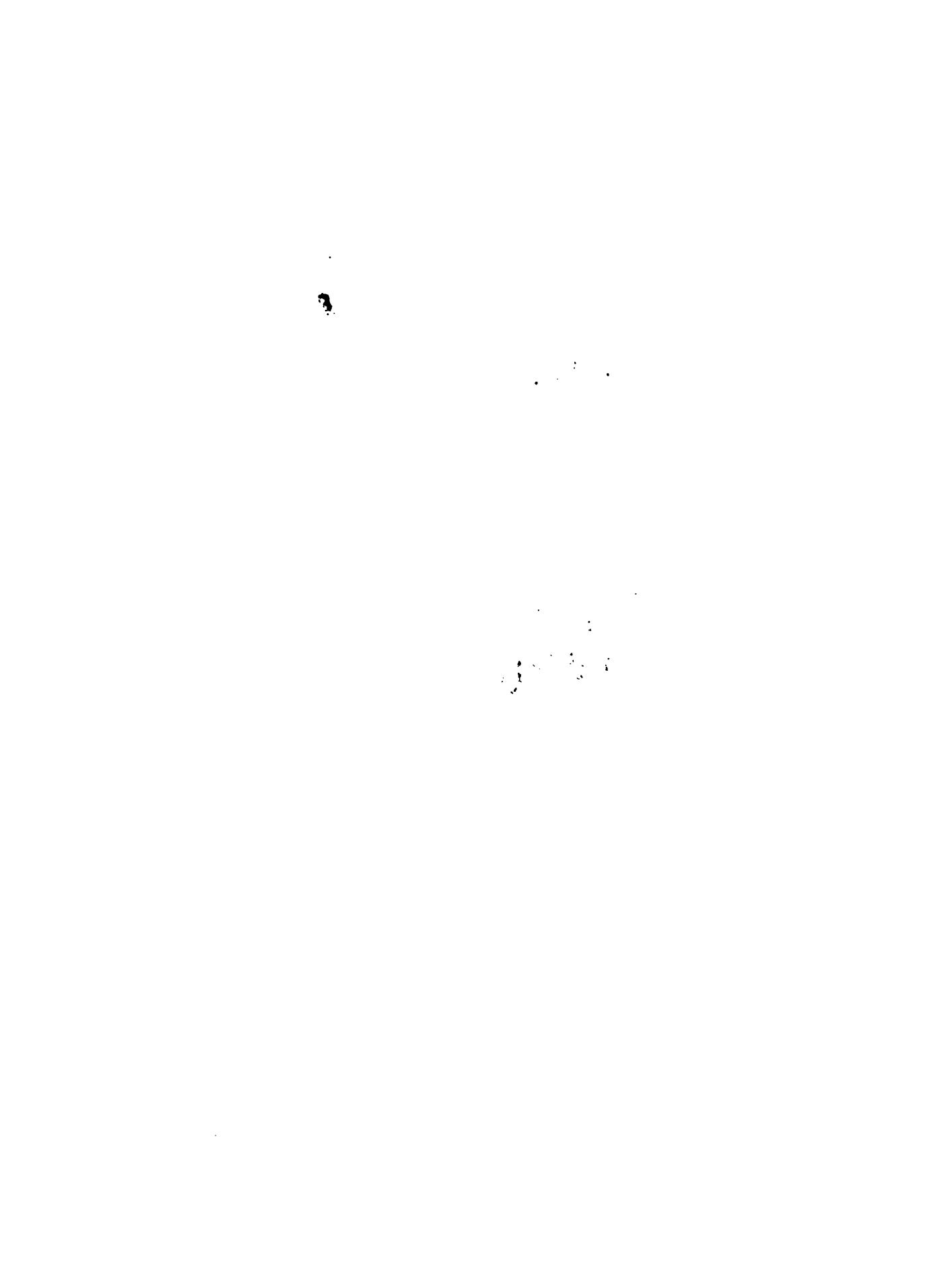
Here, would the reuerent Father haue reply'd,
 That it were far more Magnanimitie,
 T'indure, then to resist : that we are ty'd
 As well to beare the inconueniencie
 And straynes of Kings and States ; as to abide
 Vntimely raynes, tempests, sterilitie,
 And other ills of Nature that befall :
 Which we, of force, must be content withall :

II 2

But that a speedy messenger was sent
 To shewe, the D. of *Clarence* was hard-by.
 And, thereupon, *VVarwicke* breakes-off, and went
 (With all his traine attending formally)
 To intertwaine him, with fit complement ;
 As, glad of such an opportunitie
 To worke vpon, for those high purposes
 He had conceiu'd in discontentednes.

The ende of the eighth Booke.

END OF VOL. II.



3 2044 018 906 081

This book should be returned to
the Library on or before the last date
stamped below.

A fine is incurred by retaining it
beyond the specified time.

Please return promptly.

NOV 8 '66 H

1206-053

CANCELLED

DEC 6 '68 H

1921 110

CANCELLED

NOV 21 '67 H

1711-706

JUN 29 '68 H

CANCELLED

DEC 23 '68 H

1906-603

CANCELLED

DEC 27 1968

1763138

141
144
145
153
156

